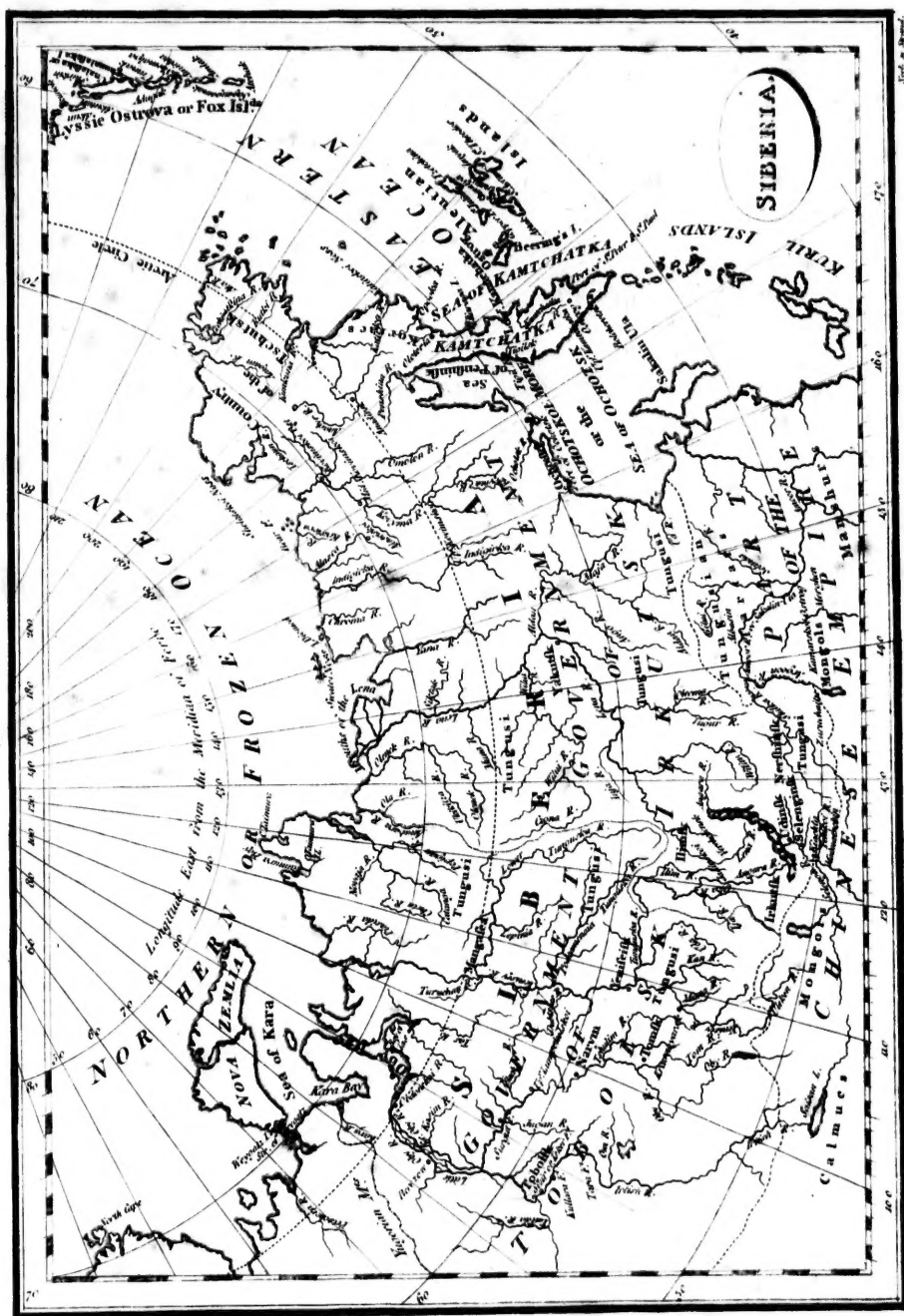




ACCOUNT
OF THE
RUSSIAN DISCOVERIES

BETWEEN
ASIA AND AMERICA.

To which are added,

THE CONQUEST OF SIBERIA.

AND

THE HISTORY

OF THE
TRANSACTIONS AND COMMERCE

BETWEEN

RUSSIA AND CHINA.

BY
WILLIAM COXE, A.M. F.R.S. F.S.A.
RECTOR OF BEMERTON.

THE FOURTH EDITION, CONSIDERABLY ENLARGED.

LONDON,
PRINTED FOR MESSRS. CADELL AND DAVIES, IN THE STRAND.

1803.

nw
970P
C879
1803a

TO

JACOB BRYANT, ESQ.

AS

A PUBLIC TESTIMONY

OF THE HIGHEST RESPECT FOR

HIS DISTINGUISHED

LITERARY ABILITIES,

THE TRUEST ESTEEM FOR

HIS PRIVATE VIRTUES,

AND

THE MOST GRATEFUL SENSE OF MANY

PERSONAL FAVOURS,

THE FOLLOWING PAGES ARE

INSCRIBED,

BY

HIS FAITHFUL AND AFFECTIONATE

HUMBLE SERVANT,

WILLIAM COXE.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

PREFACE

TO THE FOURTH EDITION.

THE first edition of this work gave to the public the earliest account of the Russian Discoveries between Asia and America, which were so little known even to the Russians themselves, that a translation was printed at St. Petersburg. It commenced with the voyages made by merchants subsequent to Beering's expedition in 1740, and terminated with that of Krenitzin and Levashef in 1769.

The work being long out of print, the author was repeatedly urged to give a new edition, and to add those accounts which would render this series of voyages complete, from the earliest attempts of Beering to the present time. The reader will therefore find in this edition, a complete series of voyages from 1711 to 1792, comprising all that is known on the subject. Among these additions are Steller's interesting Narrative of Beering's fatal Expedition from Kamchatka to the Coast of America; the Account of Shelkoff's Voyage and Settlement in Kadiak, and the Voyages of Ismaelof and Besharof from Kadiak to the Coast of America. These narratives, published in the *Netie Nordische Beytraege* by Pallas, in the German tongue, have never before been submitted to the English reader.

The

28961

Pacific N. W. History Dept.
PROVINCIAL LIBRARY
VICTORIA, B. C.

The author has also given abstracts of Billing's two voyages, from Mr. Sauer's narrative of the expedition; and among the Supplementary Accounts of the Russian Discoveries is inserted an abstract of Tschitschagof's Voyage towards the North Pole, which is contained in the Nordische Beytraege, and for the first time given in an English dress. This voyage is the more curious as it was performed before the expedition of Captain Phipps, and fully ascertains the impracticability of penetrating into the high northern latitudes.

By a careful examination the author has been able to identify many of the discoveries of the Russians with those of our navigators, and to clear up much of the obscurity which has hitherto enveloped this subject. To give place to these additions he has excluded several conjectural chapters relative to the vicinity of Asia and America, and respecting the longitude and latitude of the different places which subsequent discoveries have rendered unnecessary. To elucidate the whole, has given, with the assistance of Mr. Arrowsmith, a new chart of the Russian and English discoveries in the North Pacific Ocean.

PREFACE

TO THE FIRST EDITION OF 1780.

THE late Russian Discoveries between Asia and America have, for some time, engaged the attention of the curious; more especially since Dr. Robertson's admirable History of America has been in the hands of the public. In that valuable performance the elegant and ingenious author has communicated to the world, with an accuracy and judgment which so eminently distinguish all his writings, the most exact information at that time to be obtained, concerning those important discoveries. During my stay at Petersburg, my inquiries were particularly directed to this interesting subject, in order to learn if any new light had been thrown on an article of knowledge of such consequence to the history of mankind. For this purpose I endeavoured to collect the respective journals of the several voyages subsequent to the expedition of Beering and Tschirikof in 1741, with which the celebrated Muller concludes his account of the first Russian navigations.

During my researches I was informed that a treatise in the German language, published at Hamburg and Leipzig in 1776, contained a full and exact narrative of the Russian voyages, from 1745 to 1770*.

* The title of the book is, Neue Nachrichten von denen Neu entdeckten Inseln in der See zwischen Asia und Amerika aus mitgetheilten Urkunden und Auszuegen verfasst von J. L. S.

But

But I should have paid little attention to the anonymous publication, had I not been assured, from very good authority, that it was compiled from original journals. Not resting, however, upon this intelligence, I took the liberty of applying to Mr. Muller himself, who, by order of the Empress, had arranged the same journals, from which the anonymous author is said to have drawn his materials. Previous to my application, Mr. Muller had compared the treatise with the original papers; and he favoured me with the following strong testimony to its exactness and authenticity: "Vous ferez bien
" de traduire pour l'usage de vos compatriotes le petit livre sur les îles situées
" entre le Kamtchatka et l'Amérique. Il n'y a point de doute, que l'auteur
" n'ait été pourvu de bons mémoires, et qu'il ne s'en soit servi fidèlement.
" J'ai confronté le livre avec les originaux." Supported by this very respectable authority, I considered this treatise as a performance of the highest credit, and well worthy of being more generally known and perused, and I have therefore in the first part of the present publication, submitted a translation of it to the reader's candour; adding occasional notes to those passages which seemed to require explanation. The original is divided into sections without any references; but as it seemed more convenient to divide it into chapters; and to accompany each chapter with a summary of the contents, and marginal references; I have moulded it into that form, without making, however, any alteration in the order of the journals.

The additional intelligence which I procured at Petersburg is thrown into a Second Part: it consists of some new information, and of three journals*.

* The journal of Krenitzin and Levashef, the short account of Synd's voyage, and the narrative of Shalaurof's expedition, Part II. Chapters I. VII. VIII.

never before given to the public. Amongst these I most particularly mention that of Krenitzin and Levashef, which, together with the chart of their voyage, was communicated to Dr. Robertson, by order of the Empress of Russia; and which that justly admired historian has, in the politest and most obliging manner, permitted me to make use of in this collection. This voyage, which redounds greatly to the honour of the sovereign who planned it, confirms in general the authenticity of the work which I have translated, and ascertains the discoveries made by the private merchants.

As a further illustration of this subject, I collected the best charts which could be procured at Petersburg, of which a list will be given in the following advertisement. From all these circumstances, I may venture, perhaps, to hope that the curious and inquisitive reader will not only find in the following pages the most authentic account of the progress and extent of the Russian discoveries, which has hitherto appeared in any language; but be enabled hereafter to compare them with those more lately made by that great and much to be regretted navigator, Captain Cooke, when his journal shall be communicated to the public.

As all the furs which are brought from the new-discovered islands are sold to the Chinese, I was naturally led to make enquiries concerning the commerce between Russia and China; and finding this branch of traffic much more important than is commonly imagined, I thought that a general sketch of its present state, together with a succinct view of the transactions between the two nations, would not be unacceptable.

x

PREFACE.

The conquest of Siberia, as it first opened a communication with China, and led to all the subsequent discoveries described in this volume, will not appear unconnected, I trust, with its principal design.

The materials of this second part, as also of the preliminary observations concerning Kamtchatka, and the commerce to the New-discovered Islands, are drawn from books of established and undoubted reputation. Mr. Muller and Mr. Pallas, from whose interesting works these historical and commercial subjects are chiefly compiled, are too well known in the literary world to require any other vouchers for their judgment, exactness, and fidelity, than the bare mention of their names. I have only further to apprise the reader, that, besides the intelligence extracted from these publications, he will find some additional circumstances relative to the Russian commerce with China, which I collected during my continuance in Russia.

I cannot close this address to the reader without embracing with peculiar satisfaction the just occasion, which the ensuing treatises upon the Russian discoveries and commerce afford me, of joining with every friend of science in the warmest admiration of that enlarged and liberal spirit, which so strikingly marks the character of the present Empress of Russia. Since her accession to the throne, the investigation of useful knowledge has been the constant object of her generous encouragement. The authentic records of the Russian history, have, by her express orders, been properly arranged; and permission to inspect them is readily granted. The most distant parts of her vast dominions have, at her expence, been explored and described by persons of great abilities and extensive learning; by which means new and important lights
have

PREFACE.

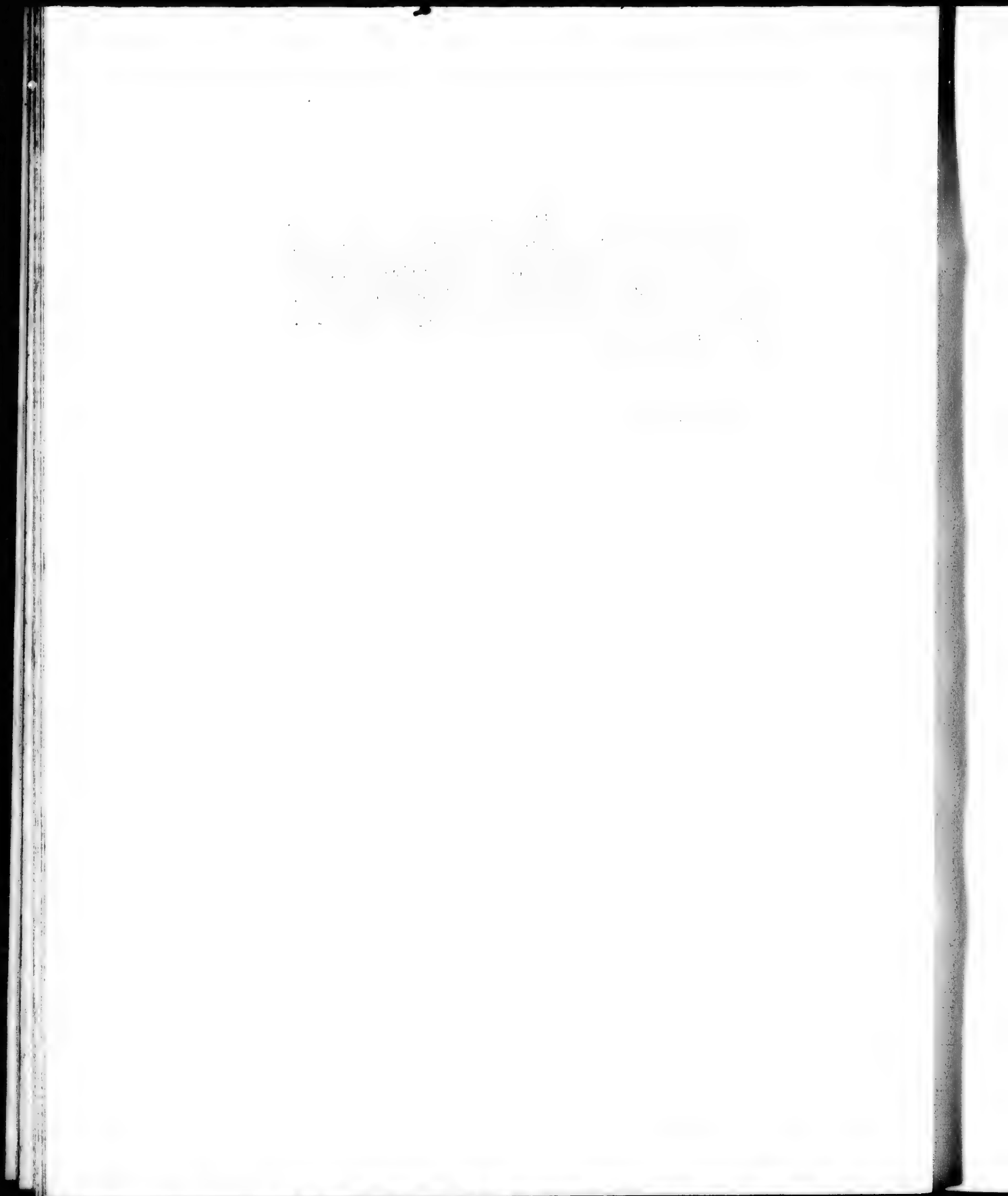
xi

have been thrown upon the geography and natural history of those remote regions. In a word, this truly great princess has contributed more, in the compass of only a few years, towards civilizing and informing the minds of her subjects, than had been effected by all the sovereigns her predecessors since the glorious æra of Peter the Great.

MARCH 27, 1780.

ba

EXPLA-



EXPLANATION

Of some Russian Words made use of in the following Work.

Baidar, a small boat.

Guba, a bay.

Kamen, a rock.

Kotche, a vessel.

Krepost, a regular fortress.

Noss, a cape.

Ostrog, a fortress surrounded with palisadoes.

Ostroff, an island.

Ostrova, islands.

Quass, a sort of fermented liquor.

Reka, a river.

The Russians in their proper names of persons, make use of patronymics; these patronymics are formed in some cases by adding *Vitch* to the christian name of the father; in others *Off* or *Eff*; the former termination is applied only to persons of condition; the latter to those of an inferior rank. As, for instance,

Among persons of condition *Ivan Ivanovitch*, Ivan the son of Ivan.

Of inferior rank, *Ivan Ivanoff*,

Michael Alexievitch, } Michael the son of Alexèy.

Michael Alexeeff, }

Sometimes a surname is added, *Ivan Ivanovitch Romanoff*.

TABLE

TABLE

Of Russian Weights, Measures of Length, and Value of Money.

WEIGHT.

A pood weighs 40 Russian poods—36 English.

MEASURES OF LENGTH.

Sixteen vershocks—an arsheen.

An arsheen—28 inches.

Three arsheens, or seven feet,—a fathom*, or sazshen.

Five hundred sazshens—a verst.

A degree of longitude comprises $104\frac{1}{2}$ versts— $69\frac{1}{2}$ English miles. A mile is therefore 1,515 parts of a verst; two miles may then be estimated equal to three versts, omitting a small fraction.

VALUE OF RUSSIAN MONEY.

A rouble—100 copecs; its value varies according to the exchange from 3s. 8d. to 4s. 2d. Upon an average, however, the value of a rouble is throughout this work, reckoned at four shillings †.

* The fathom for measuring the depth of water is the same as the English fathom,—6 feet.

† The value of a rouble (1803) is only 2s. 6d.

CONTENTS.

Preliminary Observations concerning Kamtchatka.

Chap.	Page.
1. D ISCOVERY and Conquest of Kamtchatka—Present State—Government—Population—Tribute—Volcanoes	1
2. General Idea of the Commerce carried on to the New-discovered Islands—Equipment of the Vessels—Risks of the Trade, Profits, &c.	6
3. Furs and Skins procured from Kamtchatka and the New-discovered Islands—Sea-Otters—Different Species of Foxes	7

Account of the Russian Discoveries.

PART I.

Period 1—1711 to 1741.

From the Conquest of Kamtchatka to the Conclusion of Beering's and Tchirikof's Expeditions.

1. Origin of the Russian Discoveries—Voyage of Beering towards the Northern Ocean	17
2. Steller's Journal of Beering's Voyage of Discovery from Kamtchatka to the Coast of America, in 1741	24
SECT. 1. Departure from Kamtchatka—Discovery of America—Description of the Coast—Account of an Island on which Steller landed—Animal, vegetable, and marine Productions—Indisposition of Beering, and Insubordination of the Crew—Return towards Kamtchatka—Incidents of the Voyage—Distresses of the Crew	26
SECT. 2. Remarks on Steller's Narrative, and Conjectures relative to the Parts of America touched at by Beering and Tchelekof	27

Account

Account of the Russian Discoveries.

PERIOD II.

From 1741 to 1778.

Chap.	Page.
1. Conquest of Siberia—Commencement of the New Discoveries—Their Progress—Encouraged by the Empress—Position of the New-discovered Islands	79
2. Voyages in 1745—First Discovery of the Aleütian Isles by Michael Nevodsiukof	86
3. Successive Voyages from 1747 to 1753, to Beering's and Copper Island, and to the Aleütian Isles—Voyage of Emilian Yugof—Of the Boris and Glebb—Of Andrew Tolstyuk to the Aleütian Isles, 1749—Voyage of Vorchief, 1750—Of Novikof and Baecof from Anadyrsk—Shipwreck upon Beering's Island—Voyage of Durnef, in the St. Nicholas, 1754—Narrative of the Voyage—Description of the Aleütian Isles—Some Account of the Inhabitants	92
Voyages from 1753 to 1756.	
4. Kolodilof's Ship sails from Kamtchatka, 1753—Departure of Serebranikof's Vessel—Shipwrecked upon one of the distant Islands—Account of the Inhabitants—The Crew construct another Vessel and return to Kamtchatka—Departure of Krassilnikof's Vessel—Shipwrecked upon Copper Island—The Crew reach Beering's Island in two Baidars	100
5. Voyages from 1756 to 1758—Voyage of Andrean Tolstyuk in 1756 to the Aleütian Isles—Voyage of Ivan Shilkin in the Capiton, 1757—Shipwrecked upon one of the Fox Islands—The Crew construct a small Vessel, and are again Shipwrecked	105
6. Voyages in 1758, 1759, and 1760—to the Fox Islands—in the St. Vladimir, fitted out by Trapesnikof, and commanded by Paikof, 1758—and in the Gabriel, by Betshevin—Account of the Inhabitants of Alaksu or Alachskuk—Voyage of the Peter and Paul to the Aleütian Islands, 1759	110
7. Voyage of Andrean Tolstyuk in the St. Andrean and Natalia, 1760—Discovery of some new Islands called Andreanofskie Ostrova—Description of six of those Islands—Account of the Inhabitants—The Vessel wrecked upon the Coast of Kamtchatka	117
8. Voyage of the Zacharias and Elizabeth, fitted out by Kulkoß, and commanded by Drusinín, 1762—They sail to Umnak, and to Unalashka, where they winter—The Vessel destroyed; and all the Crew murdered by the Islanders, except four—Their Adventures and wonderful Escape	123
9. Voyage of the Vessel called the Trinity, under the Command of Korovin, 1762—Winters at Unalashka—Puts to Sea in the Spring—Stranded in a Bay of the Island Umnak,	

CONTENTS.

xvii

Chap.

Page.

Umnak, and the Crew attacked by the Natives—Many of them killed—Others carried off by Sickness—Are reduced to great Straights—Relieved by Glottof, twelve of the whole Company only remaining—Description of Umnak and Unalashka—and Account of the Inhabitants	- 139
10. Voyage of Stephen Glottof in the <i>Andreas</i> and <i>Natalia</i> , 1762—He reaches the Fox Islands—Sails beyond Unalashka to Kadyak—Winters on that Island—Repeated Attempts of the Natives to destroy the Crew—They are repulsed, reconciled, and prevailed on to trade with the Russians—Account of Kadyak—Its Inhabitants—Animals—Productions—Glottof sails back to Umnak—Winters there—Returns to Kamtchatka—Journal of his Voyage	- 142
11. Voyage of Soloviof in the <i>St. Peter</i> and <i>Paul</i> , 1764—He passes two Winters upon Unalashka—Attempts of the Natives to destroy the Crew—Return of Soloviof to Kamtchatka—Journal of his Voyage—Description of the Islands Umnak and Unalashka—Productions—Inhabitants—Their Manners—Customs, &c. &c.	- 160
12. Voyage of Otcheredin in the <i>St. Paul</i> , 1765—He winters on Umnak—Arrival of Levasheff upon Unalashka—Return of Otcheredin to Ochotsk	- 177
13. Conclusion—General Position and Situation of the Aleütian and Fox Islands—Further Description of the Dress, Manners, and Customs of the Inhabitants—Their Feasts and Ceremonies	- 183
14. Voyage of Captain Krenitzin and Lieutenant Levashef, to the Fox Islands in 1768 and 1769—Krenitzin winters at Alashka, Levashef upon Unalashka—Productions of Unalashka—Description of the Inhabitants of the Fox Islands	- 191
15. Voyage of Lieutenant Synd, to the North-East of Siberia—He discovers a Cluster of Islands, and a Promontory, which he supposes to belong to the Continent of America, lying near the Coast of the Tchutski	- 203

Account of the Russian Discoveries.

PERIOD III.

From 1778 to the Termination of the Voyage of Billings in 1792.

1. *Narrative of Shchekof's Voyage to Kadiak, from 1783 to 1787.*—Sails from Okotsk to Kadiak—Attacked by the Konaghi—Succeeds in terrifying them by the Effects of Fire-arms—Forms a Settlement—Other Engagements with the Natives—Conciliates their Affection—The Party afflicted by the Scurvy—Expeditions to the neighbouring Islands, and the Coast of America—Description of the Climate—Returns—Destination

	tion of the two Vessels during his Absence—Reaches Bolcherretsk—Arrival of an English Ship in the Port of St. Peter and St. Paul—Proceeds to Irkutsk—General Account of the Inhabitants and Productions of the Islands, and of the American Coasts - - - - -	205, 207
2.	Voyage of Ismaelof and Betsharoff—Touch at Kadiak—See Suklia or Montague Island—Enter Prince William's Sound—Anchor in Nutchek Bay or Port Etches—Transaction—Visited by Nekshulk Atascha, a native Chief—Description of the Animals and Productions of the Bay of Tchugatsk, or Prince William's Sound -	232
3.	Quit Prince William's Sound—Steer to the Island Atchaka, or Vancouver's Middleton's Island—Kill a Chief who attempted to assassinate one of the Russians—Sail to Koiac or Kaye's Island—Description—Proceed along the American Coast—Visited by the Natives—Anchor in the Bay of Yakutat, or Port Mulgrave—Description of the Dwellings, Manners, &c. of the Inhabitants—Visited by the Chief Ilchack - - - - -	240
4.	Quit the Bay of Yakutat—Sail along the Coast—Explore the River Ralco—Enter the Bay of Ltoua, probably Portlock's Harbour—Visited by a native Chief—Discover an Anchor which had been lost by an European Ship—Description of the Bay of Ltoua—Lose an Anchor—Quit the Bay—Reach Kadiak - - -	255
5.	<i>Additional Remarks on the Russian Settlement in Kadiak, from Vancouver</i> - - -	264
6.	Voyage of Discovery made by Captain Billings, from 1785 to 1794—Departure from Kamtchatka—Touches at Kadiak—Account of Shelekov's Establishment—Reaches Prince William's Sound—Error concerning the Position of Cape St. Elias—Kaye's Island—Return to Kamtchatka—Second Expedition—Passes the Chain of Aleutian Islands to Unalashka—Sails to the Bay of St. Laurence—Traverses the Country of the Tchutski—The Ships return to and winter at Unalashka—Distresses of the Crews—Account of the Inhabitants, and the Mode of carrying on the Russian Trade—Final return to Kamtchatka - - - - -	268

◆◆◆◆◆

Supplementary Account of the Russian Discoveries.

1.	Attempts of the Russians to discover a North-East Passage—Voyages from Archangel towards the Lena—From the Lena towards Kamtchatka—Extract from Muller's Account of Deshneff's Voyage round Tschukotskoi Noss—Narrative of a Voyage made by Shalauoff from the Lena to Shelatskoi Noss - - -	281
2.	Expedition of Captain Billings into the Frozen Ocean, from the Mouth of the Kovyma - - - - -	300
		3. At-

CONTENTS.

Chap.		xix Page.
3.	Attempt of Tchitschagof to discover a North-East Passage—Stopped by the Ice—Win- ters in Bell Sound—Endeavours to force a Passage round Spitzbergen—Returns— His Remarks on this Navigation—Second Voyage	- 303
4.	Concluding Remarks on the Discoveries of Vancouver, and the Desiderata in the Geography of these Regions	- 310

PART II.

Conquest of Siberia.

1.	Irruptions of the Russians into Siberia—Exploits and Progress of Yermac—Defeats Kutchum Chan—Conquers his Dominions—Receives a Reinforcement of Russian Troops—His Defeat and Death—Veneration paid to his Memory—Russian Troops evacuate Siberia—Re-enter and conquer the whole Country—Their Progress stopped by the Chinese	- 318
----	--	-------

Transactions between Russia and China.

2.	Commencement of Hostilities between the Russians and Chinese—Disputes concerning the Limits of the two Empires—Treaty of Nerzhinsk—Embassies from the Court of Russia to Pekin—Treaty of Kiakta—Establishment of the commercial Interchange between the two Nations	- 330
3.	Account of the Russian and Chinese Settlements on the Confines of Siberia—Descrip- tion of the Russian frontier Town Kiakta—of the Chinese frontier Town Mai- matschin—its Buildings, Pagodas, &c.	- 340
4.	Commerce between the Chinese and Russians—List of the principal Exports and Imports—Duties—Average Amount of the Russian Trade	- 354
5.	Description of Zurukaitu—and its Trade—Transport of the Merchandise through Siberia	- 364
6.	Tartarian Rhubarb brought to Kiakta by the Bucharian Merchants—Method of examining and purchasing the Roots—Different Species of Rheum which yield the finest Rhubarb—Price of Rhubarb in Russia—Exportation—Superiority of the Tartarian over the Indian Rhubarb	- 368

DIREC-

DIRECTIONS FOR THE PLATES.

1. Reduced Copy of the Map of Siberia, published by the Academy of Sciences
at St. Petersburg, in 1777 - - - - - to face the title page.
2. Chart of the Russian and English Discoveries in the North Pacific Ocean - -
to face page 17.
3. Chart of the Voyage made by Krenitzin and Levashef to the Fox Islands -
to face p. 191.
4. Chart of Synd's Voyage - - - - - p. 203.
5. Chart of Shalaurof's Voyage - - - - - p. 282.
6. View of Maimatschin - - - - - p. 342.

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS

CONCERNING

KAMTCHATKA.

CHAP. I.

*Discovery and Conquest of Kamtchatka—Present State—Government—
Population—Tribute—Volcanoes.*

THE Peninsula of Kamtchatka was discovered by the Russians the latter end of the seventeenth century. The first expedition was made in these latitudes in 1696, by sixteen Cossacs, under the command of Lucas Semænof Morosko, who was sent against the Koriacs of the river Opooka by Vlodimir Atlassof commander of Anadirsk. Morosko penetrated within four days journey of the river Kamtchatka, and returned to Anadirsk*, after exacting tribute from a single village.

In the following year Atlassof, at the head of a larger body, penetrated into the Peninsula, took possession of the river Kamtchatka by erecting a cross upon its banks, and built some huts upon the spot, where the Upper Ostrog now stands.

* S. R. G. V. 3. p. 72.

These expeditions were continued during several years: Upper and Lower Kamtchatkoi Ostrogs and Bolcheretsk were built, the Southern district conquered and colonised, and in 1711 the whole Peninsula was reduced under the Russian dominion.

During some years the possession of Kamtchatka brought little advantage to the crown, except a small tribute of furs exacted from the inhabitants. The Russians indeed occasionally hunted foxes, wolves, ermines, fables, and other animals, whose valuable skins form an important article of commerce among the Eastern nations. But the fur trade was inconsiderable, until the Russians discovered the islands between Asia and America. Since these discoveries, the variety of rich furs, procured from those islands, has greatly increased the trade of Kamtchatka, and rendered it an important branch of Russian commerce.

The Peninsula of Kamtchatka lies between 51 and 62 degrees of North latitude, and 172° and 186° of longitude from the isle of Ferro; or West from Greenwich. It is bounded on the East and South by the sea of Kamtchatka, on the West by the seas of Okotsk and Penshinsk, and on the North by the country of the Koriacs.

It is divided into four districts, Bolcheretsk, Tigil'skaia Krepost, Verchnei or Upper Kamtchatkoi Ostrog, and Nishnei or Lower Kamtchatkoi Ostrog. The government is vested in the chancery of Bolcheretsk, which depends upon the chancery of Ochotsk. The whole Russian force, stationed in the Peninsula, consisted in 1777, of no more than three hundred men*.

* Journal of St. Petersburg for April 1777.

The present population of Kamtchatka amounts to scarce four thousand souls. Formerly the inhabitants were more numerous; but in 1768, the small-pox, carried off five thousand three hundred and sixty-eight persons. In 1776 there were only seven hundred and six males in the whole Peninsula who were tributary, and an hundred and fourteen in the Kuril Isles, which are subject to Russia.

The fixed annual tribute consisted of 279 sable, 464 red foxes, 50 sea-otters, with a dam, and 38 cub sea-otters. All furs exported from Kamtchatka pay a duty of 10 per cent. to the crown; the tenth of the cargoes brought from the new-discovered islands is also delivered into the customs.

Many traces of volcanoes have been observed in this Peninsula; and some mountains are still in a burning state. The most considerable of these volcanoes is situated near the Lower Ostrog. In 1763 a great noise was heard within the mountain, and flames of fire burst from different parts. These flames were immediately succeeded by a large stream of melted snow-water, which flowed into the neighbouring valley, and drowned two Kamtchadals, who were upon a hunting party. The ashes, and other combustible matter, thrown from the mountain, spread to the circumference of two hundred miles. In 1767 there was another discharge, but less considerable. Every night flames were observed issuing from the mountain, and the eruption, which attended them, did no small damage to the inhabitants of the Lower Ostrog. Since that year no flames have been seen; but the mountain emits a constant smoke. The same phenomenon was observed upon another mountain, called Tabaethinski.

The face of the country is chiefly mountainous. It produces in some parts birch, poplars, alders, willows, underwood, and berries, of different sorts.

Many vegetables are raised with great facility; such as white cabbage, turnips, radishes, beet-root, carrots, and cucumbers. Agriculture is in a low state, which is chiefly owing to the nature of the soil and the severe hoar frosts; for notwithstanding various attempts to cultivate oats, barley, and rye, no crop has ever been sufficiently productive to answer the labour and expence. Hemp however has been recently cultivated with great success*.

Every year a vessel, belonging to the crown, sails from Okotsk to Kamtchatka, laden with salt, provisions, corn, and Russian manufactures; and returns in June or July the following year with skins and furs.



Additions to the Account of Kamtchatka.

The three divisions of Tygil, Nishni, and Virchin, were each commanded by a serjeant, and Bolcheretsk was the residence of the commander in chief and his assistant, who were dependant on the chancery of Ochotsk. In 1783, the Empress removed the seat of government, from Bolcheretsk to Nishni Kamtchatka, under the name of a city, establishing a military commandant of the rank of lieutenant colonel, and a court of justice for civil and criminal causes, (called Bemskoi Sud) the president of which must go once a year round the peninsula, to keep order and decide trivial disputes, also to recover tribute. He was also the Capitan Ipravnick, a magistracy of which all the members were merchants, and presided over commerce and trade.

In 1787, Kozloff Ugrinin, commandant of Okotsk, visited Kamtchatka, and divided it into two districts, Nishni and Petropavlofski, the former compre-

* Journal of St. Petersburg.

hending Virfhni and Tygil, the latter the harbour and Bolcheretfk. The whole force confifted in 1793, in only about 300 Coffacs. An application was made for as many more, which was probably granted.

The rivers are the Kamtchatka, the greateft, and in fact the only one that deferves the name, winding in a fouthern direktion to Nifhni, where it turns eastward, and falls into the fea of Kamtchatka, in the latitude 56°. Its courfe is about 800 verfts, 500 of which it is navigable in fmall veffels. The æftuary is full of fhifting banks, and very fhallow; the water is clear, and the river abounds with the fineft fifh: falmon of different forts, falmon trout, and trout, and immense fhools of herrings afcend to Nifhni in May and Oëtober. The fecond river is Byftria, which rifes clofe to the fource of the Kamtchatka, and flows to the fouth. It is only navigable in fmall boats 30 verfts upwards from Bolcheretfk: here it is joined with the Natfkike, and bears the name of the Bolfhoi Reka. It falls into the bay of Whekafka, in the fea of Ochotfk. The Natfkike flows 110 verfts in a direktion nearly weft. In the fame mountain rifes the Avatsha, which, after a courfe of 70 verfts, enters the bay of Avatsha, 12 verfts weft of Petropauloffky. The Paratounka takes a circuitous courfe of about 70 verfts from the vicinity of the Villuitfh, and flows into the N. W. extremity of the bay of Avatsha, only 5 miles from its fource. It is navigable at high-water for fmall boats to the village of Paratounka, only 6 verfts from its mouth. Numberlefs rivulets flow into the fea of Ochotfk, but except the Bolfhoi Reka, the Tygil and Itsha are the moft confiderable, and their fources are only 40 verfts from the fea.

The volcanoes are, Klutshieffky, 80 verfts from Nifhni, up the river Kamtchatka. On the 20th of November, 1789, a great rumbling noife, with a fmart fhock of an earthquake, preceded a violent eruption of fmall ftones, afhes, and flames,

flames, which continued, with daily shocks, until the 21st of February, 1790. From the information of Captain Billings, the city was illuminated by the flame. The ashes were scattered 800 versts from the mountain, and at half that distance so thickly as to prevent travelling in sledges. August 21st, 1792, about five in the morning, a sudden explosion of large stones and ashes was immediately followed by a dreadful earthquake, continuing with astonishing violence three quarters of an hour. It was felt through the whole peninsula, even to Bolcheretsk, where its duration was only a few seconds. All the brick ovens and chimnies were thrown down at Nishni, and the people in consternation crawled over the bed of the river Raduga, which was dry for half an hour, to the mountains.

Shaevelutsh, a volcano, eighty versts north of Klutshevsky, from which smoke sometimes issues. Tolbatsh, or Tolbatshuisk, 200 versts south of Klutshetskoi, constantly emits smoke on the north side near the summit, and along a ridge which seems to unite it to the northern chain. Avatsha, or Avatshinsk, 40 versts to the north-eastward of the harbour of St. Peter and Paul, or Petropaulofski. In 1785 was a violent eruption, and a considerable part of the summit fell in; and in 1799, another covered the neighbourhood for many miles with ashes and pumice-stone. Constant smoke issues from the summit, particularly in wet weather. Ozernoi Sopka (Yavina, by the Kamtchadals) on the Lopatka, about 60 versts from the south point of the peninsula, began burning in 1792. The neighbouring vallies abound in hot springs. Villutsh, called by Cook Paratounka Sopka, is an extinguished volcano. Alaid, a lofty mountain, of sugar-loaf form, rising out of the sea, twelve miles west of the south point of Kamtchatka, burnt violently in 1792.

Hot springs are found all over the peninsula.

Two

Two villages on the river Kamtchatka, are inhabited by a small colony of Russian peasants; the one is 15 versts below Virshni, the other at the foot of Klutshesky mountain.

Rye is here cultivated; but the ground would probably produce wheat. The farmers are very few in number, subject to heavy taxes, severely treated by people in office, and find a greater profit in selling liquors to the hunting Kamtchadals, than they would obtain from agriculture; they grow just sufficient for their own provision, and are employed as pedlars and hawkers by the merchants residing at Ochotsk; most of them are (Mestshanins) privileged traders, for which they pay a stipulated sum to the magistracy.

All garden vegetables are raised with great facility; potatoes, cabbages, turnips, radishes, beet-root, carrots, &c.; salads of all kinds; the soil is very good.

Two transport vessels belonging to the crown, sail from Ochotsk every year; one to Tygil, the other to Nishni Kamtchatka; the latter generally calls at Petropavlovskoi, as does the former sometimes at Bolcheretsk; they carry salt, provisions, flour, and manufactures; and return if successful, the same year with tribute, a few furs, and salted salmon, particularly the species called Tchavitsha.

CHAP. II.

*General idea of the commerce carried on to the New-discovered Islands—
Equipment of the vessels—Risks of the trade, profits, &c.*

SINCE the conclusion of Beering's voyage, which was made at the expence of the crown, the prosecution of the New Discoveries begun by him has been almost entirely carried on by individuals. These persons were principally merchants of Irkutsk, Yakutsk, and other natives of Siberia, who formed themselves into small trading companies, and fitted out vessels at their joint expence.

Most of the vessels equipped for these expeditions are two-masted, commonly built without iron, and in general so badly constructed, that they appear ill calculated to weather so stormy a sea. They are called in Russian *Shitiki*, or sewed vessels, because the planks are sewed together with thongs of leather. Some few are built in the river of Kamtchatka; but they are for the most part constructed at the haven of Okotsk. The largest are manned with seventy men, and the smallest with forty. The crew generally consists of an equal number of Russians and Kamtchadals. The Kamtchadals occasion a considerable saving, as their pay is small; they are also less subject to the scurvy. But as Russian mariners are more enterprising, and more to be depended upon in time of danger, a proportion of them is unavoidably necessary.

The expences of building and fitting out the vessels are considerable: for there is nothing at Okotsk but timber for their construction. Cordage, sails, and some provisions, must be brought from Yakutsk upon horses. The dearth of corn and flour, which must be transported from the districts lying about

about the river Lena, renders it difficult to lay-in any large quantity for the subsistence of the crew during a voyage, which commonly lasts three or four years. For this reason no more is provided than is necessary to supply the Russian mariners with quafs and other fermented liquors.

From the great scarcity of cattle both at Okotk and * Kamtchatka little provision is laid in at either of those places: but the crew provide themselves with the flesh of sea animals, which are caught and cured upon Beering's Island, where the vessels for the most part winter. The equipment of each vessel ordinarily costs from 15,000 to 20,000 roubles; and sometimes the expences amount to 30,000. Every vessel is divided into a certain number of shares, generally from thirty to fifty; and each share is worth from 300 to 500 roubles.

The risk of the trade is great, as shipwrecks are common in the rocky and tempestuous sea of Kamtchatka: the crews are also frequently surpris'd and killed by the islanders, and the vessels destroyed. In return, the profits are considerable, and compensate the inconveniencies and dangers. On an advantageous voyage, the gain at the most moderate computation amounts to cent. per cent. and frequently to as much more. Should the vessel be capable of performing a second expedition, the expences are considerably lessened; and the profits of course increas'd.

* In 1772, there were only 570 head of cattle upon the whole Peninsula. A cow sold from 50 to 60 roubles, an ox from 60 to 100. A pound of fresh beef sold upon an average for 12½ copecs. The excessive dearness of this price will be easily conceived, when it is known, that at Moscow a pound of beef sells for about three copecs.—Journ. St. Petersburg.

Some notion of the general profits arising from this trade may be deduced from the sale of a rich cargo of furs, brought to Kamtchatka, on the 2d of June, 1772, from the New-discovered islands, in a vessel belonging to Ivan Popof.

The tenth part of the skins being delivered to the customs, the remainder was divided in fifty-five shares. Each share consisted of twenty sea-otters, sixteen black and brown foxes, ten red foxes, three sea-otter tails, and produced from 800 to 1000 roubles; so that according to this price the whole lading was worth about 50,000 roubles*.

CHAP. III.

Furs and Skins procured from Kamtchatka and the New-discovered Islands— Sea-Otters—Different Species of Foxes.

THE principal furs and skins procured from the Peninsula of Kamtchatka and the New-discovered islands are sea-otters, foxes, fables, ermines, wolves, bears, &c.—These furs are transported to Okotsk by sea, and from thence carried to † Kiakta upon the frontiers of Siberia; where the greater part is sold to the Chinese at a considerable profit.

The skins of the sea-otters are the richest and most valuable. Those animals resort in great numbers to the Aleutian and Fox Islands: they are called by the Russians *Bobri Morski*, or sea-beavers, and sometimes Kamtchadal beavers, on account of the resemblance of their fur to that of the common beaver.

* Georgi Reise, tom. I. p. 23, & seq. Journal of St. Petersburg.

† See the account of Kiakta.

From these circumstances several authors have supposed this animal to be of the beaver species; whereas it is the true sea-otter*. The females are called *Matka*, or dams; and the cubs, till five months old, *Medvedki*, or little bears, because their coat resembles that of a bear; they lose that coat after five months, and then are called *Kofchloki*.

The finest sort of fur is thick and long, of a dark colour, and a fine glossy hue. These sea-otters are taken by striking them with harpoons as they sleep on their backs in the sea, hunting them down in boats, surprising them in caverns, or taking them in nets.

Their skins bear different prices, according to their quality.

At Kamtchatka † the best fell

per skin from - - - - 30 to 40 roubles.

Middle sort - - - 20 to 30

Worst sort - - - 15 to 25.

* S. R. G. 3. p. 530. For a description of the sea-otter, *Lutra Marina*, called by Linnæus *Mustela Lutris*, see Nov. Comm. Pet. V. 2. p. 367, &c.

† Journ. St. Petersburg.—*Prices of furs at Kamtchatka, in 1793.*

Sables, 2½ to 10, 15 and 20 roubles each.	Hare skins, 10 to 15 roubles.
Fox skins, fire red (<i>Ogneſka</i>) 15 roubles.	Ermin, 10 to 15 roubles.
Common red, 3 to 5 roubles.	Stone fox, Pests, 30 copees to 1 rouble.
Black continental, 50 to 80 roubles.	Sea-otter skins from the Kuril Islands, 300 to 400 roubles.
From the islands, 10 to 15.	From America, 100 to 250 roubles.
Wolf, 8 to 16 roubles.	

The most valuable furs are always brought to Kazan and Moscow, and sold to the Armenians and Greeks.

At Kiacta* the old and middle-aged sea-otter skins are sold to the Chinese

Per skin from - - - - 80 to 140

The worst sort - - - - 30 to 40.

As these furs bear so great a price among the Chinese, they are seldom brought into Russia for sale; and several, which have been carried to Moscow as a tribute, were purchased for 30 roubles per skin; and sent from thence to the Chinese frontiers, where they were disposed of at a great profit†.

Several species of fox skins are sent from Kamchatka into Siberia and Russia. Of these the principal are the black foxes, the *Pelzi* or Arctic foxes, the red and stone foxes.—The finest black foxes are caught in different parts of Siberia, and more commonly in the Northern regions between the Rivers Lena, Indigirka, and Kovyma: the black foxes found upon the remotest Eastern islands discovered by the Russians or the Lyssie Ostrova, are not so valuable. They are very black and large; and the coat is usually as coarse as that of a wolf. The great difference in the fineness of the fur, between these foxes and those of Siberia, arises probably from the following circumstances. In the islands the cold is not so severe as in Siberia; and, as there is no wood, the foxes live in holes and caverns of the rocks; whereas in Siberia there are large tracts of forests in which they find shelter. Some black foxes, however, which are occasionally caught in the distant islands, not wholly destitute of wood, are of great value. In general the Chinese, who pay the most for black furs, do not give more for the black foxes of the New-discovered islands than from 20 to 30 roubles per skin.

* Pallas Reise, part 3. p. 137.

† S. R. G. V. 3 Pallas Reise.

The *Arctic* or ice foxes are very common upon some of the New-discovered Islands. They are called *Peski* by the Russians, and by the Germans, blue foxes*. Their natural colour is an ash or bluish-grey; but they change their coat at different ages, and in different seasons. In general they are born brown, become white in winter, and brown again in summer; in spring and autumn, as the hair gradually falls off, the coat is marked with different specks and crosses.

At Kiakta† the several varieties sell upon an average to the Chinese, per skin, from 50 copecs to - - - - - 2½ roubles.

Stone foxes at Kamtchatka, per skin, from - - - - - 1 to 2½

Red foxes, from 80 copecs to - - - - - 1 rouble.

80 copecs.

At Kiakta, from 80 copecs to - - - - - 9 roubles.

Common wolves' skins at, per skin - - - - - 2

Best sort, per skin, from - - - - - 8 to 16

Sables, per ditto - - - - - 2½ to 10.

A pood of the best sea-horse teeth ‡ sells at Yakutsk for - 10 roubles.

Of the middling - - - - - 8

Inferior ditto, from - - - - - 5 to 7.

Four, five, or six teeth generally weigh a pood, and sometimes, but very rarely, three. They are sold to the Chinese, Monguls, and Calmucs.

* Pennant's Synopsis.

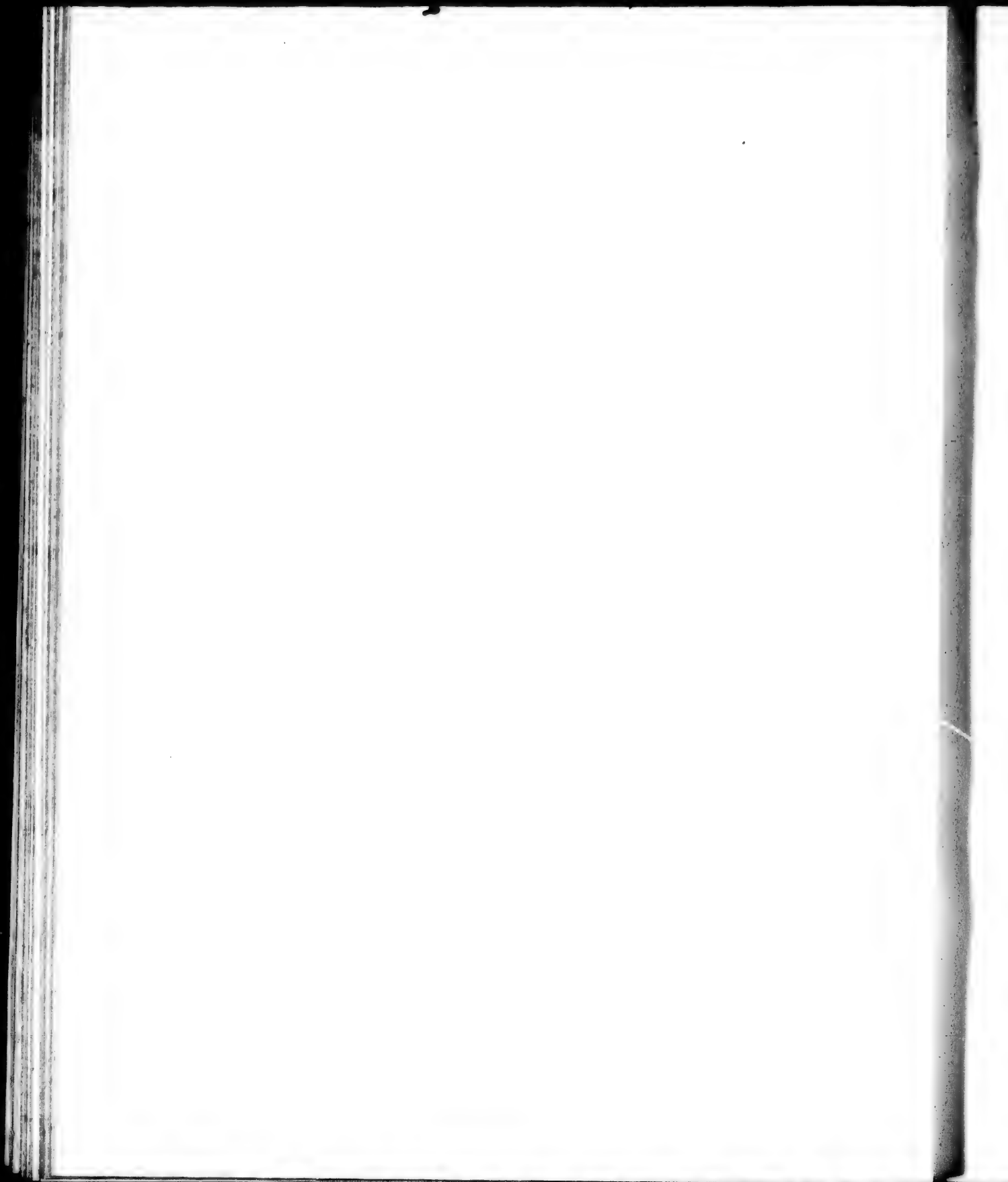
† Pallas Reise. The latest prices were,

Stone foxes, at Kamtchatka, per skin - - - 40 cop. to 1 rouble.

Red foxes - - - - - 3 to 15 roubles.

At Kiakta, from - - - - - 10 to 25 roubles.

Sables - - - - - 10 to 25 roubles.



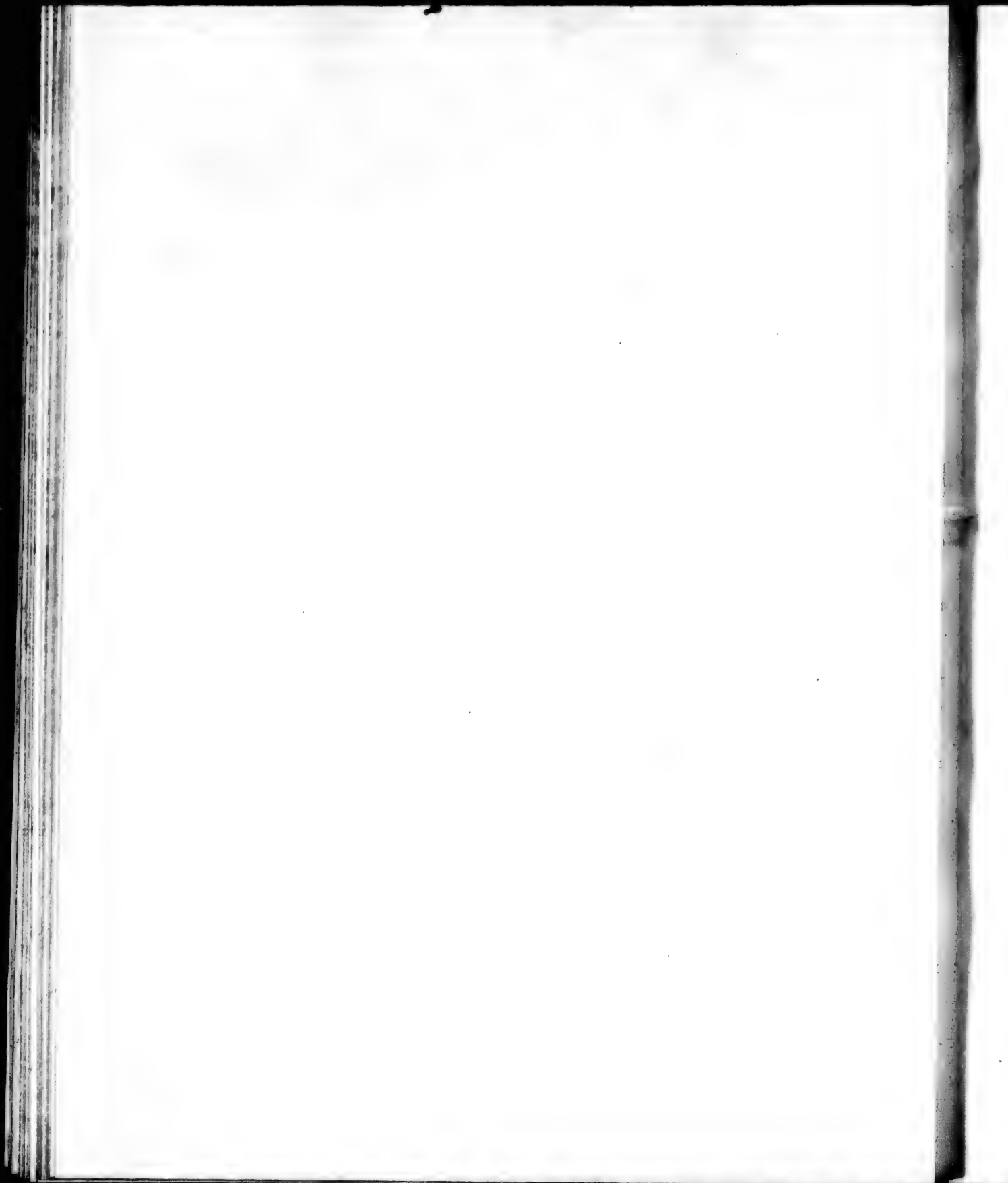
PART THE FIRST.

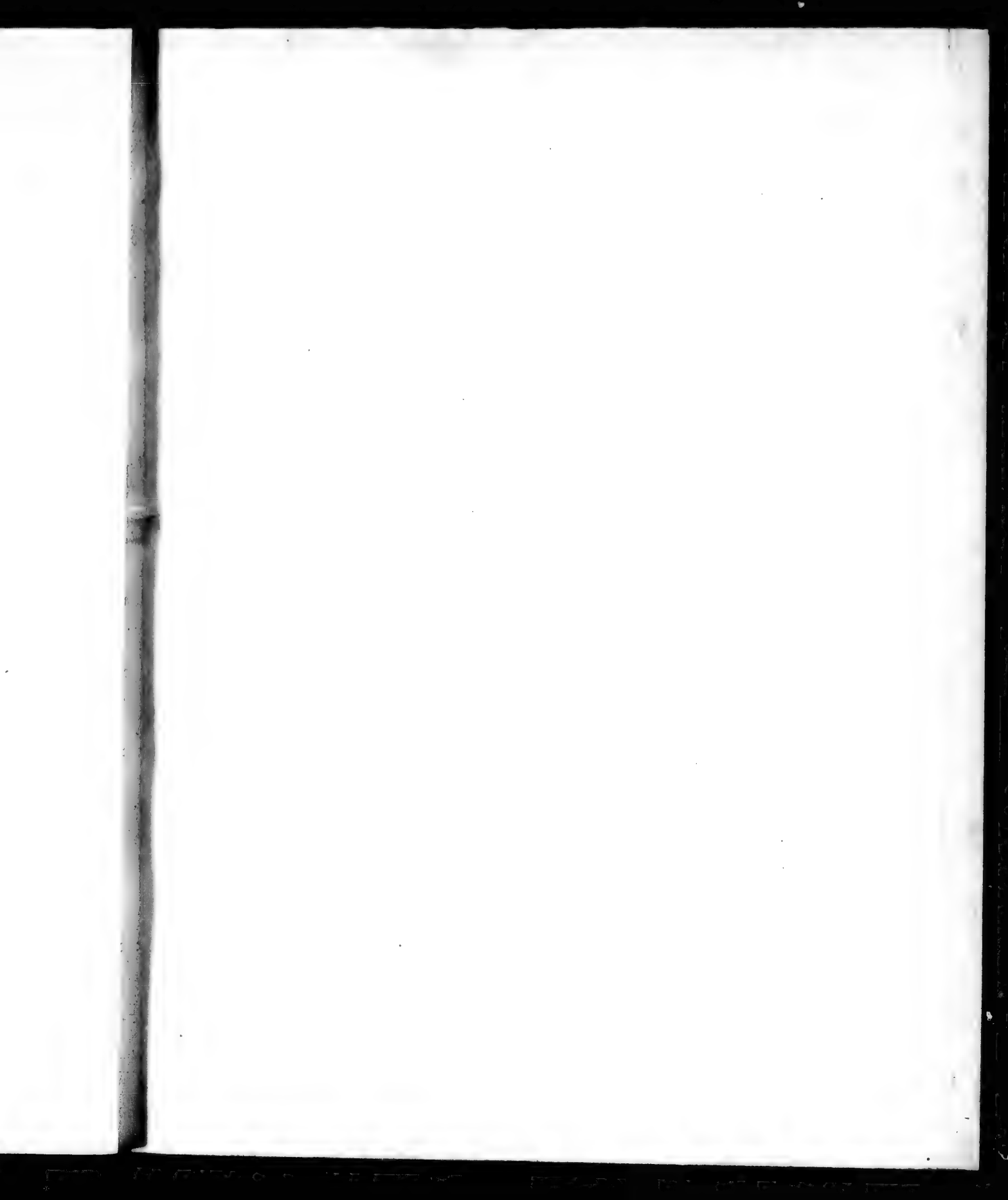


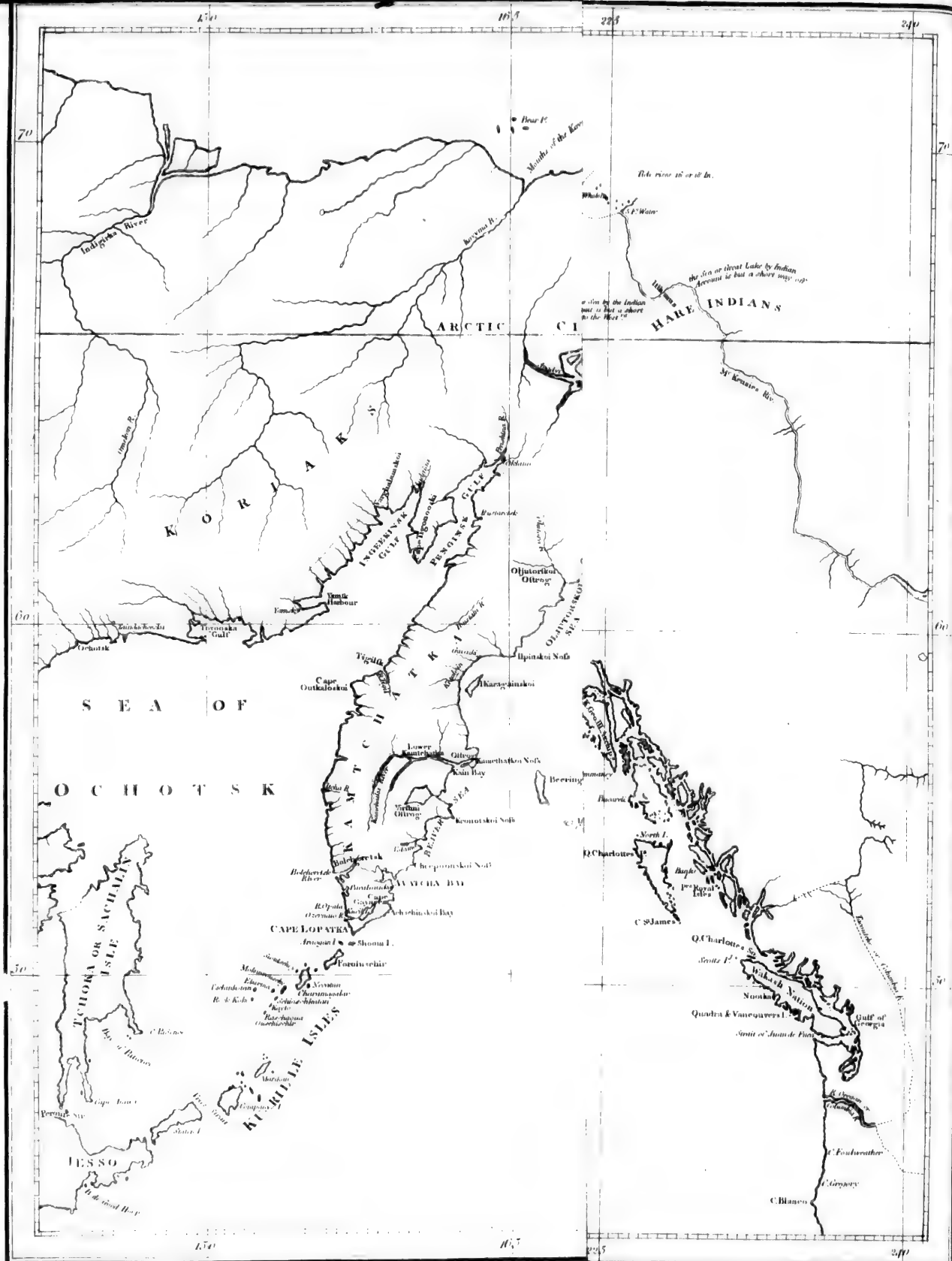
ACCOUNT

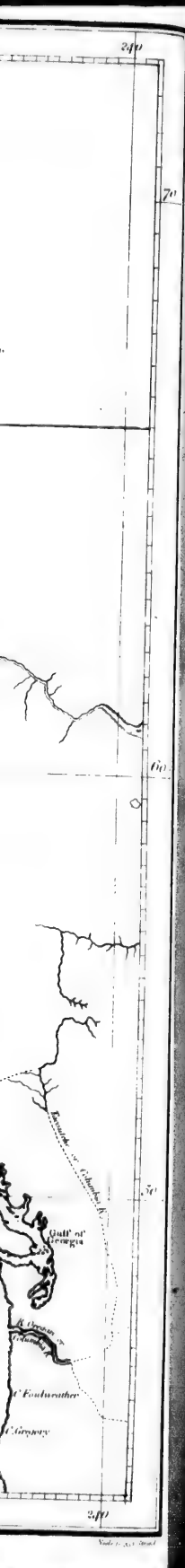
OF THE

RUSSIAN DISCOVERIES.









PART I.

Period 1—1711 to 1741.

From the Conquest of Kamtchatka to the Conclusion of Beering's and
Tchirikof's Expeditions.



CHAP. I.

*Origin of the Russian Discoveries—Voyage of Beering towards the
Northern Ocean.*

THE possession of Kamtchatka was soon followed by voyages of discovery to the North Pacific Ocean. The vague accounts collected from the Kamtchadals concerning the vicinity of America to their coasts were transmitted to Petersburg, and inflamed the zeal of Peter the Great.

That monarch accordingly formed the plan of a voyage of discovery to ascertain the separation, contiguity, or connection of Asia and America, and wrote instructions with his own hand. His death did not prevent the execution of the project, for the Empress Catharine commenced her reign with ordering an immediate expedition under the command of Vitus Beering, in conformity to the following instructions of her deceased husband :

D.

1728.



1728.

" 1. You shall cause one or two convenient vessels to be built at Kamtchatka, or elsewhere.—2. You shall endeavour to discover, by coasting with these vessels, whether the country towards the north, of which at present we have no distinct knowledge, is a part of America or not.—3. If it joins the continent of America, you shall endeavour, if possible, to reach some colony belonging to some European power; or in case you meet with any European ship, you shall diligently enquire the name of the coasts, and such other circumstances as it is in your power to learn; and these you shall commit to writing, so that we may have some certain memoirs by which a chart may be constructed."

On the 14th of July, having recommended himself to the protection of the Almighty, Beering quitted the river of Kamtchatka, in a vessel called the Fortune, having on board Spanberg and Tschirikof as his two lieutenants, and a crew of forty men. He sailed north-east within sight of land, in order to delineate the coast of Kamtchatka. On the 8th of August, in latitude $64^{\circ} 30'$, he was visited by eight natives, in a baidar, who acquainted him by means of a Koriak interpreter, that they were Tschutski; that the coast for a considerable extent was inhabited by their nation, and that the land trended towards the west. They likewise informed him of an island situated not far distant, which he discovered on the 10th, and called the island of St. Laurence. An officer who was twice dispatched to examine it, observed several houses, but no inhabitants, who, probably from fear, or some other motive, concealed themselves.

Beering continued his course till the 15th of the same month, when he found himself in the latitude of $67^{\circ} 18'$. and conceiving that he had now fully executed his orders, as he saw no land either to the north or east, he resolved

to return, deeming it useless to continue his voyage towards the west, or to run the hazard of being prevented by contrary winds from gaining Kamtchatka during the summer, and obliged to winter in a country where he was sure of meeting with little or no wood, and which might be inhabited by some nation enemies to the Russians.

From the mouth of the river Kamtchatka, to the utmost point of their voyage, they saw nothing upon the coast but great ridges of rocks, the tops of which were covered with snow, though it was summer. They traversed, according to their reckoning, about ten leagues of latitude, and thirty of longitude; their departure eastward was 372 German leagues. On the 20th of August, in their return, they were visited by forty persons in four small boats, who, from their appearance seemed to be Tchutski. They brought dried flesh, fish, and water contained in whales bladders; fifteen fox skins, and four narval's teeth, which they exchanged for pins and needles. They said their nation travelled with rein deer as far as the river Kovyma, which runs into the Northern Ocean, but had never attempted any passage by sea; they inhabited a long tract of country upon the coast, and had possessed it many years; one of them particularly added, that he had visited the fortrefs of Anadirsk, where they had traded with, and been well treated by the Russians.

On the 29th of August a violent storm, attended with a thick fog, drove the vessel upon the coast of some country east of Kamtchatka, where they were obliged to come to anchor. On the 2d of September they arrived safely in the mouth of the river Kamtchatka, and, having secured their vessel in a creek, went to the lower fortrefs, and passed the winter*.

* Harris's Complete Collection of Voyages and Travels, vol. 2. p. 1020, 1021.

This is the only accurate account ever given to the public of this interesting expedition, which ascertained the separation of the two continents, at least as high as latitude 67° , the most northern point of Beering's voyage. Muller, in his Account of the Russian Discoveries, has given a short abstract of this voyage, and has added some conjectures which only embarrass the narrative, and render it more difficult to be understood. He was at that time bewildered with the vague accounts of the Russians and Cossacs, who had visited the land of the Tchutski, and with the uncertain reports of the Tchutski themselves concerning the form and situation of Tchukotskoi Nofs, which he placed in latitude 70° ; mistakes which he afterwards candidly acknowledged and corrected.

In 1729 Beering made another attempt to discover the continent of America, which the natives of Kamtchatka described as lying not far distant to the east of their peninsula. He failed on the 5th of June, but was prevented by adverse winds from proceeding more than two hundred versts; and meeting with no land, steered round the southern promontory of Kamtchatka, entered the river Bolschaia, and arrived at Okotk on the 23d of July.

From this period no attempt was made to discover the American continent until 1741, when Beering and Tschirikof failed upon their ever memorable expedition. The whole account which Muller has given of this voyage is extremely scanty and confused, and the narrative of the transactions relating to their discoveries on the coast of America is comprised in a few lines:

" Nothing particular happened till the 18th of July, when Captain Beering, after giving orders for steering more and more northerly, came in sight of the continent of America in 58° . $28'$. north latitude, and believed, according to
his

his journal that he had sailed 50°. east long. from Avatcha. Tchirikof reached the same coast three days before, viz. on the 15th of July in 56°. north lat. and according to computation, 60°. longitude from Avatcha.

“ The coast made by Tchirikof being steep and rocky, and without islands, he anchored at some distance. Ten men being sent in the long-boat on shore, to provide water and reconnoitre the country, were to land, and make the appointed signals, but never returning, were supposed to be massacred by the inhabitants. Six, dispatched in another boat to their assistance, probably shared the same fate, as they never returned. After cruising several days, and receiving no tidings of their unfortunate comrades, Tchirikof could not venture to continue any longer on the coast, but on the 27th of July took his departure for Kamtchatka. Being impeded by contrary winds and stormy weather, he did not enter the bay of Avatcha before the 9th of October, after losing twenty-one men by the scurvy, and want of fresh water, out of seventy, of which the crew consisted; among these was the celebrated de l'Isle de la Croix, who fell down on the deck, and died at the very moment he was going to disembark.

“ At the same time Beering attempted to explore the coast which he had discovered, and to provide himself with fresh water. The country consisted of stupendous mountains covered with snow. He failed towards it, but variable breezes blowing, he could not reach it sooner than the 20th of July, when, under a tolerably large island, not far from the continent, he anchored in twenty-two fathoms water, and a soft clayey bottom. A point of land, which here projects into the sea, was called the Cape of St. Elias, because it was observed on the day of St. Elias. Another head-land, that afterwards appeared

appeared opposite the first, towards the west, received its name from St. Hermogenes. Between these points there was a bay which was deemed secure.

"For the purpose of reconnoitring this bay, Beering sent the master, Kytrof, with some armed men; another boat, in which was Steller, was dispatched at the same time for water. Kytrof found between some islands a convenient anchoring-place, secure from all winds. Landing on an island, he observed some empty huts, but saw no inhabitants, who were supposed to come from the continent for the purpose of fishing."

Muller then gives a brief account of Steller's observations, which I shall omit, because they are more circumstantially related in his own narrative.

"On the 21st of July they again put to sea; and attempted to trace the coast as far as 65° N. latitude, but they could proceed no farther to the north, and were even obliged to sail continually to the south, because the shores trended south-west. At the same time they were impeded by numerous islands, in parts contiguous to the continent. When they hoped to sail in security, land was discovered a-head, and on both sides, wherefore they were obliged several times to turn and seek a free passage. It occasionally happened at night, that with the same wind and weather, they at one time sailed in calm water, and at another in a boisterous sea, where they could hardly govern the ship. What else could this indicate, than that in the calm they had sailed in sheltered water, between islands which the darkness of the night did not permit them to discover*.

* Muller, S. R. G. V. 3.

"Some

"Some days passed without seeing land, when, on the 27th of July, about midnight, they came into twenty fathoms water. They could not discover whether it was a sand bank, or whether the continent or an island, on account of the darkness. They steered sometimes on one side and sometimes on the other; every where they found less water; they durst not venture to anchor, for the wind was strong, and the waves high. Moreover it was to be feared they might be too far from the continent, or too near. At last it was concluded to hazard sailing to the south, in which they succeeded, and after steering some hours longer in twenty fathoms water, they regained an open sea.

"An island, discovered on the 30th of July, in foggy weather, was called Tumanooi Oltrof, that is, The Foggy Island. They approached it till they had only seven or eight fathoms water, and anchored: but when the weather began to clear up, found themselves more than a verst from the island. The whole month of August elapsed with similar occurrences; when the ship's crew began to be much afflicted with the scurvy, and particularly the commander."

From this scanty and uncertain account, much doubt was entertained, whether Beering and Tchirikof ever reached America; and since later discoveries have removed that doubt, subsequent navigators have differed about the precise parts explored by Beering and Tchirikof. Cook places Beering's Bay in one place; Vancouver in another; and the Russians in Prince William's Sound.

CHAP. II.

INTRODUCTION.

Steller's Journal of Beering's Voyage of Discovery from Kamtschatka to the Coast of America, in 1741.

PALLAS has given to the public* the Journal of Steller, who accompanied Beering in this memorable expedition. As it contains the only circumstantial relation of that expedition, rectifies several errors in Muller's account, and as it has never made its appearance in English, I deemed it necessary, for the complete elucidation of the Russian Discoveries, to submit to the public a translation of those parts which detail the principal events of the voyage; but have omitted several prolix accounts of his disputes with the officers, and some of his frequent digressions concerning the supposed situation of America.

The narrative is preceded by an Introduction, in which Steller censures the preparations and conduct of the expedition, and lays down an hypothesis of the relative situations of Asia and America towards the North. As this point is no longer doubtful, it is needless to enter into the discussion; and therefore only that part of the Introduction which relates to himself, and to his engagement in the expedition is subjoined.

* In the 5th volume of his *Neue Nordische Beytraege*.

"I shall omit," he says, "any account, as well of the ten years' preparations, as of Spanberg's voyage to Japan, and confine myself to the narrative of Beering's and Tchirikof's voyage, as long as the two vessels continued together, and from their separation to the particulars of Beering's voyage, and the fate of the crew, until their return to Kamtchatka on the 26th of August, 1742. But as it is well known that I was sent in 1738 from St. Petersburg to Kamtchatka, solely for the purpose of examining the natural history of those regions, and had not the smallest share in the preparations, it is incumbent on me to relate the manner in which I engaged in the expedition.

"In 1740 I sent a petition from Kamtchatka to the senate, requesting permission to accompany Captain Spanberg in another voyage to Japan, to obtain authentic information concerning the intermediate islands, as well as Japan itself. Meanwhile, Captain Beering being informed of my insatiable desire to explore new regions, invited me to Avatcha, and persuaded me to accompany him to America, under the promise of justifying my conduct to the senate, and of supplying me with every means in his power to forward my researches. He also sent me a minute of a general consultation with his officers, wherein I was charged with the examination of the minerals. I therefore undertook this office from disinterested motives, which, I trust will plead my excuse for quitting Kamtchatka without orders. And I dare anticipate my pardon, although I have made so few discoveries. The scantiness of my information was chiefly occasioned by the failure of the Captain's promises, who only shewed me the continent of America at a distance, and with great difficulty consented to set me ashore on three islands, without assistance, like a criminal, and discouraged my zeal with the most peevish expressions. My advice was also contemptuously rejected by the officers, who, disgusted with their long
E residence

residence in Siberia, were eager to return, and endeavoured to complete in one summer what could not be accomplished in less than two."

SECTION I.

Departure from Kamtchatka—Discovery of America—Description of the Coast—Account of an Island on which Steller landed—Animal, vegetable, and marine Productions—Indisposition of Beering, and Insubordination of the Crew—Return towards Kamtchatka—Incidents of the Voyage—Distresses of the Crew.

The expedition consisted of two packet-boats, the *St. Peter*, commanded by Beering, and the *St. Paul* by Tchirikof. The *St. Peter*, in which ship I sailed, carried, besides the captain, Waxel the chief lieutenant, Kytrof the master, and other officers, seventy-six men.

June 4, we took our departure from Avatcha, and sailing with south, west, and south-west winds, E. S. E. and S. E. by E. were on the 11th 135 dutch miles from Avatcha, and in latitude $46^{\circ} 47'$. On the 12th we first perceived tokens which indicated the vicinity of land, such as marine plants, and flocks of ducks and sea-gulls. In latitude 51° . we were separated from the *St. Paul* during a thick fog, and never again came in sight of her, though we failed to the 46° . of latitude, in hopes of rejoining her. On the 18th we altered our course, and steered north-eastward, making two degrees of longitude to one degree of latitude. On reaching 52° . latitude, we again perceived many tokens of land, to the north, but did not discover it till the 18th of July in 59° . and
some

some minutes of latitude, and 49° longitude east from Avatcha, or about 500 dutch miles. I trust I may be justified for thus briefly relating the events of a month's voyage, as we had favourable wind and weather; saw nothing but sky and water, and heard from the officers only expressions of astonishment, at the gross mistake of supposing that Kamtschatka was only separated from America by a narrow channel. During this period the Captain being confined by constant indisposition to his cabin, was deceived by the reports of the officers, and his opinion for steering towards the north constantly overruled.

After detailing at some length, his altercations with the officers, for not crediting his assertions that they were not far from land, and for not steering towards the north, Steller continues his journal.

Though land was discovered on the 15th of July, yet as it was not sufficiently visible to be delineated, it was according to custom called my fancy, although the next day it was more clearly discerned in the same place. It was very elevated, and we observed a mountain stretching inland, whose height was so great as to be visible at sea at the distance of sixteen dutch miles. I do not recollect to have noticed a higher mountain either in Siberia or Kamtschatka. The coast of the continent was much broken, and indented with many bays and harbours.

It is easy to conceive the general joy which the sight of land occasioned, and all congratulated the captain on this important discovery, which would redound so much to his honour: but he coldly received their congratulations, and even shrugged up his shoulders on the occasion. He also said afterwards:

to me and Plenisher in the cabin, "We think we have completed our discoveries, and many entertain great expectations, but we do not consider our distance from home, and what accidents may yet happen. We are unacquainted with the country, we are unprovided with provisions, and perhaps contrary winds may impede our return." As we approached land, it was ridiculous to hear the discordant exclamations of the crew, priding themselves on the importance of the discovery, anticipating great rewards, or pathetically bewailing their situation. Some proposed to seek a convenient harbour, others represented the danger of drawing near to the land. All clamorously urged their respective opinions, but no one made any representation to the captain. General consultations, though formerly held upon every trifle, were omitted in this important business, the chief object of this expensive expedition, which had already employed ten years in preparation; and the only union which appeared among us was that of being confined in the same vessel.

On the 17th we slowly approached the land with a gentle breeze, and on Saturday the 18th came so near that we discovered, with great satisfaction, large tracts of forest and extensive plains stretching at the feet of the mountains. The shore was flat, level, and apparently sandy. We now left the continent on our right, and sailed to the north-west under a lofty island, consisting of a single mountain clothed with firs; and, on account of contrary winds, passed the night in repeated tacks.

Sunday the 19th in the morning, being two miles from the northern extremity of the island, a trifling contest arose. On the preceding day we saw the strait between the continent and the island, into which a considerable river seemed to flow, as I conjectured from the current visible two miles from shore,

shore, the colour and freshness of the water, and the various drifted substances. I therefore proposed to enter this strait, and anchor in the mouth of the river where we should probably find sufficient water for our vessel which drew only nine feet, and it would have been a more commodious situation than under the island where we anchored on the 20th: but my proposal was rejected.

We passed the remainder of the day in tacking to approach the island, to enter the great bay which we saw at some distance, and at the same time get under the land, which we effected on the 20th, though not without considerable terror on account of the numerous islands between which we anchored. The outermost of these was called Cape St. Elias, because we passed it on St. Elias's day, and it was a singular circumstance that the officers persisted in calling that island a cape, although a cape is a promontory of the continent.

In this state of affairs, instead of amicably agitating the question concerning their future proceedings, whether they should explore the coast, or pass the winter in these parts, or return without delay to Kamtchatka; no regular consultation was held, but every one was silent and acted as he pleased. It was however unanimously agreed that a boat should be sent for water, and I could not avoid observing that we were only come to convey American water to Asia. It was settled that the small boat should be sent for the purpose of procuring water, and the master Kytrof should be dispatched in the large boat with a sufficient number of men and fire arms to explore the land. In vain I requested to accompany Kytrof, who was willing to receive me; my request was rejected, and it was not without difficulty that I was permitted to go on shore with the watering party with my servant, Thomas Lepekin, a Coffac.

Coffac. They endeavoured to alarm me with terrible accounts of the ferocity of the natives; but I was not to be deterred, and I landed with the watering party.

I had no sooner landed than I went towards the continent in company with my Coffac, and within a verst found marks of inhabitants. I observed a trunk of a tree hollowed like a trough, in which the natives, according to the custom in Kamtchatka, had recently boiled meat by means of hot stones: several large bones were scattered about, which appeared to have been roasted; they seemed to be the bones of a land animal, and probably of a rein-deer, which may have been brought from the continent. I likewise noticed remains of Yukola, or dried fish, which the Kamtchadals use instead of bread; also shells of large muscles, some of which were eight inches in diameter, and sweet grafts * prepared in the Kamtchadal manner. Near the same place were the embers, which were still glowing, and a wooden tinder-box, similar to those used in Kamtchatka; but the tinder was different, being formed of white moss, bleached by the sun †. From these circumstances we may conclude that the natives were of the same origin as the Kamtchadals; but we must suppose that the continent of America trends farther to the west, and is much nearer to Kamtchatka to the north; for it is not credible that the Kamtchadals should be able with their crazy vessels to perform a voyage of near five hundred miles.

* The *Spondilium foliolis pinnatifidis* of Linnæus.

† I am informed by Mr. Sawyer, that this tinder, which Steller mistook for white moss, is composed of the leaves of wormwood mixed with ashes, and rubbed between the hands.

Having

Having satisfied my curiosity, I continued my progress, and at the distance of three versts found a way leading through a thick forest, near the shore. Many of the trees were stripped of their bark, which I presume was used to cover the habitations. On the skirt of the forest I found fresh grass, strewn on the ground, and on removing it observed a layer of stones, under which was a bark covering supported by poles, which concealed a cellar (or cabin) containing several household utensils, particularly vessels made of bark; also salmon, and sweet herb, from which brandy is distilled at Kamtchatka, and which was prepared with more cleanliness, and better tasted than I had before seen. I likewise observed a species of hemp, which I thought was prepared from nettles, and was probably used for making fishing nets as in Kamtchatka: also rolls of the inner bark of larch or pine, dried, which in case of necessity is used as food in many parts of the Russian empire: great quantities of thongs made of sea-weed, which were of extraordinary strength. I found arrows much larger than those used by the Kamtchadals, and similar to those of the Aleutians and Tartars, well polished and streaked, indicating that they were fashioned with iron tools.

I sent my Cossack with two bundles of dried fish, some arrows, a wooden tinder-box, some thongs made of bark, and several kinds of grass, to the watering party, with orders to deliver them to the captain, and to request two or three men to assist me in exploring the country. I then covered the cabin again, proceeded alone, and having continued six versts, came to a steep rock, extending into the sea, which I climbed with much difficulty; but perceiving that the eastern side was perpendicular, I turned towards the south, hoping to reach the other side of the island, proceed along the strait, and explore the river and harbour. On descending the mountain, which was

over

overspread with forests, without any traces of a road, finding it impassible, I reascended, looked mournfully at the limits of my progress, turned my eyes towards the continent, which it was not in my power to explore, and observed, at the distance of a few versts, some smoke ascending from a wooded eminence, which gave me hopes that I should meet with some of the natives.

I hastened back to the place where I had landed, and sent an account to the captain, requesting the small boat with some men for a few hours, and in the mean time employed myself in describing the scarcest plants which I had discovered; but to my inexpressible concern, I received a message to return instantly on board, or I should be left behind. I still however continued on shore, sent my Cossack to shoot some rare birds, which I discovered at a little distance, and again proceeded towards the west, reconnoitring the country, and did not return till sun-set, laden with plants and other curiosities. Having again received a positive order to repair on board, I reached the vessel with my collection.

Soon after my return I advised the officers to send some presents to the subterraneous dwelling, and particularly specified knives and hatchets: but objecting to these instruments, which might be considered as symbols of hostility, they left an iron kettle, a pound of tobacco, a Chinese pipe, and a piece of silk*.

An

* I have been thus minute in specifying these things, which were sent to the cabin, because they furnish an unquestionable proof that this was Kaye's Island, as will appear from a passage in Sauer's Account of Billings's Expedition.

" An old man came on board the 29th, who seemed very good natured and intelligent. Mr. Sarcishev and I entered into conversation with him through our American interpreter, and asked him

An hour after my arrival Kytrof returned in the great boat ; he had found a harbour between some islands, close to the continent, where we could remain in security. He saw no inhabitants, but found a wooden dwelling, from which he brought several utensils, particularly a hollow globe of hard burnt clay, inclosing a little clapper-stone, which appeared to be a child's toy, and a whet-stone whereon copper instruments had been sharpened.

These were all our transactions and observations, not on the continent on which no one landed, but on a small island which seemed about three miles * long, and half a mile broad ; near the continent, (which here formed a great bay, covered with many islands) and only separated from it by a strait less than half a mile in breadth. The only reasons why no landing was attempted on the continent, were indolence, obstinacy, an untimely fear of a few unarmed and terrified savages, and a daftardly impatience to return home ; so that the time bestowed on making observations had a geometrical proportion to the preparations ; ten years being employed in the preparations, and ten hours in making observations. We have indeed a sketch of the continent on paper, but a very imperfect idea of the country itself, founded on a few discoveries,

him how long it was since the first ships made their appearance among them ; and whether he remembered any boats having been lost ? He answered, that several boats had been lost, which by his account we thought to be Spaniards. He said that they frequented (on the chase in summer) an island, which he described so particularly as convinced us beyond a doubt, that it was the Kay's Island of Captain Cook. He remembered, that when he was a boy, a ship had been close into the bay, on the west side of the island, and had sent a boat on shore ; but on its approaching land the natives all ran away. When the ship sailed, they returned to their huts, and found in their subterraneous store-room, some glass beads, leaf tobacco, an iron kettle, and something else. This perfectly answers to Steller's account of the Cape St. Elias of Beering, and is undoubtedly the very spot where Steller landed, and where the things above-mentioned were left in the cellar." P. 193.

* Dutch or German miles.

upon a single island, and grounded on mere supposition. The following is drawn from a cursory view of the American continent.

This part of America is superior in climate to the north-eastern coast of Asia; for though the country, as well near the coast as at some distance inland, abounds with very high mountains, most of whose summits were covered with perpetual snow; yet these mountains are much more fertile than those of Asia, which produce small quantities of stunted trees, scanty herbage, and are principally bare rock, or covered with moss and aqueous plants; whereas the mountains of America are thickly overspread to a considerable height with the finest trees, and clothed with rich herbage. The springs, of which we noticed a large number, rise in the vales, or at the foot of the mountains, and do not burst from the fides, and even near the summits of the rocks, as in Siberia.

The productions in the vegetable kingdom are earlier, more abundant, and more regular in their growth than those of Siberia, and rich forests overspread the coasts even as high as 60°. latitude. I am therefore of opinion that the continent of America extends from Cape Elias to beyond 70°. of latitude, and protects this part of the coast from the north winds, while towards the east it is covered by a high range of mountains.

I found all the common berries in great abundance, and also a new kind of raspberry, which though not quite ripe, from its size and excellent taste, deserved to be transplanted to St. Petersburg.

The land animals that fell under my observation, besides the rein deer, which from the scattered bones I judged to be natives of the continent, were
black

black and red foxes, not wild. Of common birds I perceived only the raven and magpie, but above ten foreign and unknown species, which from the brilliancy of their plumage were easily distinguished from the feathered tribes of Siberia; one in particular of lively colours, of which I recollected to have seen a figure in a recent account of Carolina*. The appearance of this bird convinced me that we were on the coast of America.

The mildness of the climate brings the shoals of fish sooner near the shore than at Kamtchatka. Besides whales and dog-fish, sea-otters frequent the shore in prodigious numbers; a proof that they are probably little disturbed by the natives, otherwise they would be as scarce as on the coast of Kamtchatka. In regard to minerals, the scanty information which I am able to give cannot be attributed to my negligence, when it is considered how little a single man can perform in ten hours, in a small island, and without assistance; and I will freely own that I observed nothing but sand and grey rock.

On the 21st of July, impressed with an anxious desire to return, Beerling appeared on deck, contrary to his usual custom, and without consulting any of the officers, ordered the anchor to be weighed, notwithstanding the remonstrances of Lieutenant Waxel to remain on the coast till all the vessels were filled with water. A few days afterwards the captain proposed to the officers, though without a regular consultation, that as winter was approaching, and they were unacquainted with the country, sea, and winds, they should be contented with their discoveries, and return immediately homewards; adding, that

* Steller alludes to Catesby's Carolina, 15th plate, which represents the North American blue jay, to which Steller's bird bears some resemblance, but is of a different species. Hence this bird was no proof of their vicinity to the American continent, though no one can doubt that Steller was close to the coast.—Pallas.

though the land probably extended towards the west, yet it might also trend to the south. He expressed his apprehension lest the vessel might be stranded in the night or in foggy weather, or in case of autumnal storms be wrecked upon some unknown island in an unknown sea.

This proposal, continues Steller, being thwarted by Lieutenants Waxel and Kytrof, we sailed along the coast, until the 26th of July, for it was thought proper to follow the coast, though it would have been sufficient after sailing one hundred versts to have steered one or two degrees to the north.

On the 27th, at night, a gale drove us towards a bank, stretching into the sea, on which we found sixty * fathoms water; but the land could not be discerned †.

July 28 and 29, stormy and rainy weather, we perceived many signs of a contiguous land, from various drifted substances.

July 30, ‡ 31. In clear weather and a calm sea, we pursued our course, with a favourable south-easterly wind.

August

* According to Muller, they came into twenty fathoms water. "They could not know," he says, "whether it was a sand bank, or whether they ought to take care of the continent, or of an island, for it was quite dark. Every where they found less water; to come to an anchor they durst not venture, for the wind was strong, and the waves high. Moreover it was to be feared that they might be either too far from the shore, or too near it. At last it was concluded to hazard sailing to the south, in which they succeeded so well, that after steering some hours longer in twenty fathoms water, they regained a secure sea." S. A. G. p. 1.

† Muller says it was quite dark.

‡ According to Muller, on the 30th of July, they discovered an island which they called Toomanoi Ostrof, or Foggy Island, near which they anchored in seven or eight fathoms water; and

August 1. At one o'clock in the morning we found ourselves by soundings in no more than four fathoms water, which was otherwise reported to the captain; but the weather being calm we got so far from land, that we anchored in eighteen or twenty fathoms till day-break.

August 2. We found ourselves in the morning about three versts from an island*, which was tolerably large, and cloathed with forests. The weather was warm and agreeable, the sun shone brightly, and the wind was still. In vain I desired permission to land only for two hours; my request was rejected. Towards the evening we hove anchor, and steering westerly, passed the island into the open sea.

August 3. We came in sight of the continent in latitude 56°. at the distance of about fourteen miles N. N. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. and had a distinct view of high mountains covered with snow†. With an easterly wind we sailed to the south, because the continent stretched to the west, and found ourselves in a kind of bay; the continent to the W. and N. and the island to the E. before which we anchored on the 2d‡.

August 4 to 9. Steering S. we saw several high, large, and woody islands,

and it is laid down under that name in Muller's chart of Beering's expedition. But Cook thinks it there misplaced, and gives the name to another island not far distant. Vol. 2. p. 407, 410.

* Probably one of the islands in the vicinity of Kodiak.

† This is plainly that country which the Russians call Alashka.

‡ The following part, from the 2d to the 11th, is taken from a Russian translation of Steller's journal, a leaf of the original being defective.—Pallas.

lying

lying S. and W. about the distance of two or three miles, inasmuch that we seemed inclosed on all sides with land. This group of islands so much impeded our progress, that although the wind was E. and S. E. and would have carried us several hundred miles in our course toward Kamtchatka, yet we lost the whole time in making repeated tacks. In these parts we perceived numerous herds of sea-dogs, sea-bears, sea-lions (*Foca vesina et Leonina*), sea-otters and porpoises, which were the harbingers of a violent storm.

August 11. We proceeded with a gentle S. E. wind out of this land-locked bay due west.

August 12. The wind falling calm, it was unanimously determined, on account of the late season, and other circumstances, not to explore the continent farther, but to return to Kamtchatka. This determination, although signed by all the officers, from the captain to the boatwain's mate, except myself, surprised me exceedingly. We did not, however, follow the nearest course to Avatcha, but ran under the land, which was the same as if we had followed the American coast. Between the 13th and 17th, the wind being westward, we continued tacking north and south in order to reach the latitude of 53° but made little way.

On the 18th, at four in the morning, surprised with hearing the people on deck talking of land, I went up and found that they had resolved not to mention this discovery, because it appeared in the south. This land, though visible before sun-rise, was afterwards covered by a fog; yet its vicinity was evident from the quantity of drifted sea-weeds, and the sudden cessation of the west wind proved that we were between the continent and an island.

The

The officers seemed averse to make any farther discovery; yet it was unpardonable not to explore it, and lay it down upon the map. But it was astonishing that they did not attribute the continual west wind to the vicinity of land, and endeavour to run southward till they came opposite the open channel, where they might have expected a north or north-east wind, which from the experience of Beering himself was known to prevail in the autumn.

The 19th, at three in the morning, with an east wind we ran due west. Towards noon the wind subsiding, and the horizon clearing up, the continent was perceived to the north, but notwithstanding the quantity of drifted substances, and the appearance of numerous animals and birds, none believed it except myself and a few more. Steering southerly, on the 20th neither the land nor any signs of it were visible.

From the 20th to the 23d we plied under the parallel of 53° , and observed numerous whales, no longer single, but in couples. On the 25th we experienced a violent storm from the west, which compelled us to drive; the 26th we passed in tacking, and on the 27th the horizon was clear, the air cold, and the wind continued westerly.

On this day it was determined on account of contrary winds, and the scarcity of water, to take a north-easterly course and return to the land. On the 28th we saw several sea-lions, a kind of haddock which is seldom found in more than ninety fathoms water, and a black sea-gull; soon afterwards we imagined we saw land N. by E., and on the morning of the 29th we discovered five islands, behind which the continent appeared at the distance of eleven or twelve

twelve miles. The weather was clear and pleasant, and at three o'clock in the afternoon we reached the foremost of these islands, lying north and south, and late in the evening anchored near a small rocky islet, about three versts from it, to the east*. At the largest of these islands they took in water, and Steller landed for a few hours, and found several excellent springs which he in vain recommended, for the casks were filled from brackish water, to which he attributes the scurvy and other disorders afterwards prevalent among the crew.

After detailing his numerous squabbles with the officers, Steller thus describes the island and its productions. It appeared to be the largest of eight contiguous islands, lying within the compass of six german miles; it was between three and four german miles long, and three or four versts in breadth; though as we could not see the extremity, it is doubtful whether this land did not form part of the continent, which appeared north and west at the distance of ten miles. This island, like the others, consists of high rocks overpread with herbage: the rock is principally of a yellowish grey hue, and in some places I observed sand stone and black slate. The coast is rocky and abounds with springs.

The first animal I observed was a black fox, which I mistook for a dog, as he barked and was not timid. We also saw red foxes in different places, and Marmots in great numbers; I perceived the track of an unknown animal which resembled that of a wolf, though it was much larger. The sea birds

* Muller says these islands are situated in lat. 55°. 25', and were called Schumagin Isles, from the first of the crew who died and was buried here. They are situated on the east side, and near the promontory of Alaska.

were two species of swans, pelicans (*pelicani*), razor-bills (*torda*), ducks, snipes, sand-pipers, many sorts of gulls, puffins (*alca arctica*), Greenland pigeons, divers, and tufted auks (*alca cirrhata*), among which there is an unknown species. But of land birds I only perceived ravens, fly-catchers (*grifola*), snow birds (*emberiza nivalis*), and moor-hens. The fish were, malma, a species of salmon (*tetræ lagopus*), and father-lathers (*cottus scorpius*).

No trees were discerned either on this or any of the contiguous islands, nor on one which we discovered on the 14th, under the same latitude, and which could not be above forty miles distant. All the islands, likewise, which we afterwards observed in our voyage towards Kamtchatka, were destitute of wood; a circumstance probably arising from their position and narrowness, for from this point to the coast of America they lie in the direction of north-east and south-west; and those stretching towards Kamtchatka north-west and south-east. Being long therefore, and narrow in proportion to their length, they experience the most sudden transitions from heat to cold, and are exposed to the violent storms from the north and south to which these regions are peculiarly subject. Even the lowest shrubs are so crooked, that not one straight stick two ells long can be found in a whole district.

All the shrubs growing in these isles, except the dwarf willow, which does not rise more than two ells high, have been described in another place. In general I shall only add that the most rare American productions, growing on rocks, are found here as well as at Cape St. Elias, and were afterwards observed in Beering's Island, and during the autumn in Kamtchatka. The

plants growing in vallies and moist places are the same as those which are natives of Europe, Asia, and America, under the same latitude. The vegetable productions, which we found of the greatest use, were, besides the red bilberries and whortle berries, the excellent antiscorbutic herbs, cochlearia, lapathum folio cubitali (*heidel beren*), or raspberry, empetrum or schikfscha, gentian, and a species of cresses which I collected for the captain and myself. In vain I represented, that the medicine chest contained no remedies for the scurvy and asthma, the most common diseases in sea voyages, and requested some men to gather antiscorbutic herbs for the use of the crew: my proposal was contemptuously rejected, even after the captain had recovered the use of his limbs by means of scurvy-grass, and the lapathum folio cubitali, which I prescribed, in three days, had again fastened the teeth of several of the crew.

As it rained in the evening, I built a shed for the purpose of passing the night on shore; but returned to the vessel and represented the badness of the water, and urged the necessity of gathering herbs. My remonstrances had no effect: and I was ordered to gather the herbs myself, as if I had been a surgeon's apprentice.

On the 31st of August I again went on shore, continuing my occupations and exploring the country; but towards evening I was summoned hastily to the vessel, on account of a rising storm, of which not the least sign appeared on shore, as the whole crew were to be collected on board, that we might be ready to put to sea, should the storm drive the vessel from her anchorage, although the place was before said to be protected on all sides.

We

We all hastened to the eastern shore of the island, and found every thing in great confusion; the sick, who were landed the day before, could hardly be conveyed to the boat, the surf running so high that we were obliged to wade through the water up to the middle. This day we interred the first of our crew who died, of the name of Schumagin, and called the island after him, Schumagin's Island.

On reaching the vessel we had the disappointment to find that Kytrof and his party, who had been sent on shore, were not returned, and a violent storm blowing from the north-east we were apprehensive lest we should be obliged to leave them on shore. Fortunately however, the captain, during the first storm at midnight, did not permit the cable to be cut, but threw out another anchor, which saved us from being wrecked in the darkness of the night, and in the confusion which reigned among the crew; and the wind at length shifted to the west, on which quarter we were covered by the land.

September 1. The wind being still high, with continual rain, we passed the day with considerable anxiety, because Kytrof had not yet arrived. If we had not been detained by his absence we might have availed ourselves of the favourable gale which continued five days, and made more than one hundred miles in our course*. On the 3d, Kytrof and his party being returned, we weighed anchor, and with a south-west wind, passed round the rocky islet, as we could not stand out to sea till we had cleared the outermost island to the south-east. At two in the afternoon we reached the back part of the island, and came to anchor two versts from land.

* Notwithstanding the frivolous complaints of Steller, his own account clearly justifies the conduct of Beerig.

On the 4th we made an attempt to pursue our voyage by passing round the west side of the island; but being prevented by a contrary wind, we returned to our former anchorage. Here we unexpectedly saw some Americans: we heard a loud cry near a rock to the south, which we mistook for the roaring of a sea-lion, as we did not expect to find inhabitants in a desolate island, at the distance of twenty miles from the continent. Soon after two small baidars, each containing one man, were observed approaching our vessel. At the distance of half a verst they commenced a long and uninterrupted oration, which none of our interpreters understood, and which we supposed to be a prayer, conjuration, or a compliment to welcome us as strangers, similar to the ceremonies used in Kamtchatka and the Kuril Islands. As they drew near we beckoned them to approach us without fear. But as they by signs invited us to land, and seemed to offer us wood and water, we again beckoned them, and pronounced the word, *Nitjchi*, which according to Baron Lahontan in his description of North America, signifies water: this word they repeated several times, and again pointed to the land. One however, as he came near, took out from his bosom some iron or lead-coloured micaceous earth, and drew marks with it across his cheeks in the shape of two pears, stuffed his nostrils with grass, and thrust thin pieces of bone through the cartilage of his nose. He then took up a rod three ells in length, coloured red, resembling a billiard stick*, fastened two hawk's wings to it by means of whalebone, displayed it to us, and threw it laughing towards our vessel into the water. We in return tied two Chinese tobacco-pipes and some glass beads

* This rod, with its ornaments, was probably the Calumet of the American tribes, which is occasionally used both as a symbol of peace and war. It is a pipe, the bowl of which is made of red marble, with a tube of a long reed, and ornamented with feathers and wings of birds.

to a little board, and threw it towards him: he took it up, examined it, and gave it to his companion, who laid it upon his baidar. Becoming bolder, he approached nearer, but with great caution, tied the body of a hawk embowelled to another stick, and held it out to our Koriac interpreter, to receive from us a piece of Chinese silk and a looking-glass. But the interpreter pulling the stick towards him, instead of fastening the silk to it, the American alarmed, let it go, and paddled to a little distance. We then threw him the silk and looking-glass, and they both rowed to land, beckoning us to follow them. During this interview some natives on the shore continued shouting, and calling to their companions.

After a short conversation the boat was hoisted out, in which I resolved to go on shore with Lieutenant Waxel, the Koriac interpreter, and nine of the crew. We were provided with lances, hangers, and guns, which we concealed under a sail-cloth to cause no suspicion; we also took biscuit, brandy, and other trifles as presents. Unfortunately we could not land, the coast being rocky, and the surf so violent that the boat with great difficulty was prevented from being dashed to pieces. On our approach, both men and women flocked towards the shore, appearing full of admiration, and inviting us in the most friendly manner to land. The dress of both sexes was so much alike, as to be scarcely distinguished from each other.

We accordingly ordered our interpreters to strip, and wade through the water. The islanders received them in a friendly manner, and holding them under the arms, which among them is a great mark of respect, led them to the place where they had been sitting. They then presented them with a piece of whale blubber, talked incessantly, and pointed towards the other side of the hills,

hills, as if to notify the place of their dwelling, as we afterwards supposed from observing some huts in that direction, when we coasted the island eastward.

Several of the islanders remained gazing at us, and repeatedly invited us to shore; and when we made signs that it was impossible to venture near the shore, one of them lifted his baidar into the water, and rowed towards us. Notwithstanding my remonstrances he was welcomed with a cup of brandy, which he, imitating us, emptied quickly, but as quickly spit up again, appearing indignant at this supposed deception. Our men however, thought the Americans had sailors' stomachs, and endeavoured to remove his disgust by presenting him with a lighted pipe of tobacco, which he accepted: but being equally disgusted with his attempt to smoke, rowed away with great marks of displeasure. The most civilized European would be affected in the same manner if presented with toad-stool, or rotten fish and willow bark, which are delicacies with the Kamtchadals.

The wind increasing, we called back the interpreters; but the islanders, who appeared desirous of their company, would not permit them to return. They testified a particular partiality to our Koriac, who resembled them in countenance and pronunciation. They first endeavoured to detain them by offering whale blubber and paint; but finding gifts ineffectual they held them by the arms, others waded through the water, seized a rope which was fastened to our boat, and not perhaps aware of our danger, endeavoured to draw it ashore. The islanders not being dissuaded by our signs, we discharged three muskets over their heads, which so terrified them that they fell as if thunderstruck. Our interpreters, availing themselves of this opportunity, rushed into the water, and waded to the boat.

On

On recovering from their alarm the natives made signs for us to depart, and some even took up stones. We instantly returned to our vessel, much dissatisfied with our adventure; but we had reason to congratulate ourselves on our safe arrival, for a brisk south wind arose immediately, and it soon afterwards began to rain, which continued the whole night.

I shall here mention a few circumstances which attracted my attention during the short time of our continuance on the shore. The baidars of the Americans are about twelve feet long, two high, and two broad on the deck, pointed before, flat and square at the stern. The frame appears to be of ribs joined at each extremity, and extended within by cross bars. They are covered with skins, probably of seals, and stained brown or black.

The islanders, whom I observed, were mostly young or middle aged; they are of moderate stature, but tolerably well proportioned; their arms and legs very fleshy. Their hair is straight and of a glossy blackness; their face brown and flat, the nose is likewise flat, but not broad or large, the eyes black, the lips thick and turned upwards. Their necks are short, shoulders broad, bodies thick, but not corpulent. They wore shirts made with the intestines of whales, either tied round the waist with a thong, or hanging loose. They had boots and breeches like those of the Kamtchadals, made of seal skin, stained of a brownish red with alder bark, and at the girdle a long iron knife hanging in a sheath of very bad workmanship, like the Russian peasants, which appeared to be of their own manufacture.

While one of the natives was cutting a bladder with a knife, we examined it as accurately as the distance would permit, and could perceive, that it was
not

not like European workmanship. It may therefore be conjectured, that they do not possess iron ore, of which hitherto few or no traces have been discovered at Kamtchatka, and are also not acquainted with the method of smelting it. The neatness of the arrows found in the hut near Cape St. Elias, proves doubtless, that the savages must have iron or copper knives. On the contrary I know from certain information, that the Tchutski traded from one of the neighbouring islands to America; and though this intercourse, from some disagreement has been interrupted, it has been carried on through the inhabitants of the isles. The chief articles of this traffic are knives, hatchets, lances, and iron arrow heads, which the Tchutski purchase at a very high price from Anadyrsk, and barter for a much higher with the Americans for the skins of sea-otters, foxes, and martens. Now, if the Americans themselves could smelt iron, and fabricate these goods, why should they buy them at a dear rate from others?

September 8, it rained much in the forenoon, but grew variable in the afternoon. The wind being south-east, we were afraid of being driven on shore, and weighed anchor. At the same time we observed two baidars going towards the shore. We sought for an anchorage, where we might be sheltered towards the west, and found one at five o'clock. About an hour afterwards nine Americans came in their baidars drawn up in a line, and performed the same ceremonies which I have already mentioned. They wore hats of bark, coloured green and red, open at top and shaped like candle screens, apparently for protecting the eyes against the rays of the sun. Some of these screens were ornamented with hawks' feathers and grass, in the same manner as the natives of Brazil adorn themselves with tufts of feathers. These hats might lead us to suppose, that the natives of this part of America are descended from

from Asia; for the Kamtchadals and Koriacs wear the like, of which several specimens may be seen in the museum of St. Petersburg.

In exchange for a rusty kettle, five needles, and some thread, we procured two of these hats; on one of which was a little image or idol in a sitting posture, with a feather behind, probably to represent the tail. Having exchanged these articles they paddled to shore without any further ceremony, made a great fire, and shrieked for a considerable time: soon after it became dark, and we did not see them again.

On this occasion I again observed, that these people deem it a particular ornament to bore holes in various parts of the face, as we do in the ears, and to insert stones and bones. One of them had put a kind of slate pencil, above two inches long, through the cartilage of the nose; a second stuck a bone, three inches long, between the chin and under-lip, and a third in both nostrils. Finally, I observed that the greater part of these Americans have little or no beard, in which they agree with the inhabitants of Kamtchatka and other Siberian nations. It is however still to be decided, whether these people inhabit the continent or the islands. According to my opinion they visit the islands during the summer, for the sake of birds and their eggs; others for hunting whales and seals, and are probably compelled to return to the continent in winter for want of fuel.

From the beginning of September, when they seem to have fallen in with the chain of the Fox Islands in latitude 50°. to the middle of October, the weather was extremely variable: they experienced a series of storms, such as appalled the most courageous spirit, and induced the pilot, Haffelberg, to declare, that

H

during

during the experience of fifty years, he had never witnessed such violent tempests. During this dangerous navigation, in which they were repeatedly entangled with islands, and narrowly escaped shipwreck, the misery and despondency of the crew were inexpressible; and their condition was rendered still more deplorable, by discontent and insubordination, and by the helpless state of Beering. At one period only ten persons were capable of duty, and they were too weak to furl the sails, so that the ship was left to the mercy of the elements.

Steller draws a striking picture of their extreme misery:—"The general distress and mortality," he says, "increased so fast, that not only the sick died, but those who pretended to be healthy, when relieved from their posts fainted, and fell down dead, of which the scantiness of water, the want of biscuits and brandy, cold, wet, nakedness, vermin, fear, and terror were not the least causes." In this condition they passed two months, the sport of winds and waves, uncertain where they were, and what course to pursue; at one time attempting to return to the coast of America, and at another steering towards Kamtchatka.

At length, on the 5th of November, when their water was nearly exhausted, they were gratified with the sight of land, which was supposed to be Avatcha, though by their reckoning they were between 55°. and 56°. latitude, or about 2°. to the north of that place. But finding from observation that their reckoning was nearly correct, they perceived their mistake, and endeavoured to return to an island which they had passed, and supposed to be Isopa, which lies near the peninsula of Kamtchatka, to the north of Avatcha. Towards evening they stood off the land, to avoid falling in with it in the night, which threatened

to be stormy. It afterwards blew hard, and as they were incapable of furling the sails, the shrouds of the main-mast were broken.

November 6. Lieutenant Waxel, and the mate, Kytrof, over-ruled Beering's opinion to direct their course to Avatcha, and persuaded the crew to steer towards the bay last seen, by assuring them that it was Kamtschatka, although neither its position or appearance resembled any part of that coast, and it afterwards proved to be Beering's Island. These officers justified this measure from the scantiness of water, of which only six barrels remained; and by obtaining a certificate from Steller of the sickly state of the crew.

They accordingly stood towards the land, without taking sufficient precautions; for the officers were so negligent, that none of them made their appearance on deck for three hours. And though in consequence of Steller's representation, Beering ordered the lieutenant and mate to their duty, they merely directed the steersman to approach the land. "Soon after sun-set, we," says Steller, "anchored about a verst from the shore, in nine fathoms water, and within half-an-hour, though the night was fine, and the moon shone extremely bright, a dreadful swell arose, which beat the ship about like a ball, broke one of the cables, and we expected every moment to be driven on shore and dashed to pieces. Disorder and dismay instantly spread through the whole crew, and the officers for a while were incapable of determining what measures to pursue. At length, by the advice of Lieutenant Offzin and the boatswain, they suffered the vessel to drive, and after losing their second anchor, fortunately came into still-water, where they cast anchor.

November 7. Steller was employed in packing up his baggage, as he foresaw that the vessel would be driven on shore or dashed to pieces by the first storm. He then landed with Plenifner, his Coffac, and some of the sick; they shot several moor-hens, sea-otters, and sea-hounds which they dressed, and sent to the commander and their companions on board. The other officers, particularly Lieutenant Waxel, still flattered themselves that the shore on which they were driven, was part of Kamtchatka; they were however, not acquainted with the animal called the sea-otter, which at first was mistaken for a bear, and afterwards for an hyæna. Towards evening the party on shore formed a hut of drift-wood, and covered it with an old sail, in which they passed the night. From this place I shall continue the translation of Steller's Journal.

November 8. The weather was still agreeable. M. Plenifner agreed with me this morning, that he would shoot birds, and I should seek other provisions; and at noon we were to meet at this place. I went accordingly with my Coffac, eastward along the shore, collected several natural curiosities, and hunted sea-otters; but my Coffac shot eight stone-foxes, the tameness and fatness of which astonished me much. Towards noon I returned to our hut, and after dinner went with M. Plenifner and our Coffac along the shore, westward, to look for wood or poles, but found nothing. We saw some sea-otters, and killed several stone-foxes and moor-hens. In returning, we sat down at a little rivulet, refreshed ourselves with tea, and thanked God heartily that we had good water, and stood again on firm land.

This day the ship was secured as much as possible, by casting all the anchors, so the boat did not come a-shore. After supper, as we were sitting by a fire,
a stone-

a stone-fox took away two moor-hens in our presence, which was the first instance of those artful tricks and thefts committed by those animals.

I encouraged my sick Coffac, who considered me as the cause of his misfortune, and reproached me for my curiosity which had brought him into this trouble, and made the beginning of the ensuing fellowship.—“Be of good cheer,” I said, “God will help us: if this is not our country, yet we have hopes to reach it. You shall not starve; if you cannot work and wait on me, I will assist and serve you. I know your integrity and fidelity; all I have is yours, ask me only, and I will divide every thing with you.” He replied, “I am willing to serve her majesty, but you brought me into this misery: who forced you to go with these people? could you not have enjoyed the good living at the Bolchaia Reka?” His sincerity made me laugh heartily, saying, “thank God we are both alive: as I brought you into this misery, you will, if God helps us, have in me a constant friend and benefactor. My intentions were good, Thomas! let yours be the same; you know not what might have befallen you at home.”

Meanwhile I entered into an engagement with M. Plenifner to build a hut for our winter residence, and to afford each other mutual assistance in case we had landed upon an island.

November 9. The weather being fine, we made an excursion to collect wood, and fixed on the spot where we, with the rest of the crew, afterwards built our huts: we also employed ourselves in hunting foxes, of which we killed no less than sixty, with our hatchets and daggers. Towards evening we returned to our old hut, where several sick had been landed from the ship.

November

November 10. The wind was easterly, the weather clear in the forenoon, and cloudy in the afternoon, but the night was snowy and windy. We transported all our baggage to the place chosen the day before for building a hut, which was at the distance of a verst. In the mean time more sick were brought on shore, and among these the commander, who passed the night under a tent, and surprised us by his patience and resignation. He asked my opinion of the country: I replied, "It cannot be Kamchatka, as the great number and tameness of the animals plainly demonstrate that it is either very thinly or not inhabited. It cannot however, be far distant, because the vegetable productions are similar to those of that peninsula, and none of the American plants are found here. Moreover, I discovered the casement of a window of Russian workmanship, probably drifted from the Kamchatka river. Should it, however, be any part of the peninsula, it must be Kronozki Nos, which I think doubtful from the following circumstances: a part of a fox-trap, which I discovered on the shore, was not formed with iron teeth as in Kamchatka, and I therefore infer that it was brought from the coast of America. I likewise observed a species of sea animals (*manati*) not known in the peninsula, and the fogs which rise to the south seem to prove, that there is no neighbouring land in that direction." On these observations the commander only exclaimed; "Our vessel cannot be saved; God preserve our long-boat!"

After supping with the commander, on the moor-hens shot by Plenifner, I told the surgeon's-mate, Betge, that if he pleased he might join with us, for which he thanked me, and we were now four in company. We went to our new abode, sat by the fire, and settled our plan over a dish of tea.

U then

I then raised a small hut, which I covered with my two great coats and an old blanket. The air-holes on the sides were closed with foxes which we had killed this day in great abundance. So we went to rest, and M. Betge returned to the commander. Near midnight, a violent wind, accompanied with much snow, tore off our covering, and we ran towards the shore to collect wood, and brought it to a pit hollowed like a grave, capable of containing not more than two persons. Having laid some sticks across and covered it with our clothes, we made a fire, warmed ourselves, and passed the night in the pit, God be thanked, tolerably well.

November 11. I went to the shore and caught a sea-dog, boiled its lard with pease, and shared it with my three companions, who in the mean time had made two shovels, and began to widen our pit. In the afternoon the Captain Commander was brought on poles, and lodged in a tent formed with a sail, at the place we had first chosen for our habitation. We treated him and two other officers who came to our pit with tea. The officers returned to the ship, and M. Kytrof proposed to Lieutenant Waxel to pass the winter on board, as being more warm and comfortable than living in a tent on shore with a scarcity of fuel: he came ashore however the third day, and could not be prevailed on to return to the ship. We now enlarged the pit which formed our dwelling, collected wood for a roof, and for boarding it within. In the evening we made a slight roof, and received into our dwelling Roseling, gunner's-mate. At the same time some of the crew who were capable of working, dug a square pit and covered it with double sails, for the use of the sick.

11 November

November 12. We worked very hard to complete our dwelling, and others following our example made the third abode in the same manner, which was named after its beginner (the boatwain) Alexei Iwanof. To-day many sick were brought from the vessel, some of whom died as soon as they came into the air, others during the passage in the boat, and some on reaching the shore. We saw the most dismal and terrifying objects; the foxes mangled the dead before they could be buried, and were even not afraid to approach the living and helpless, who lay scattered here and there, and smell to them like dogs. One exclaimed, that he was perishing with cold; another complained of hunger and thirst, as their mouths were so much affected by the scurvy, that their gums grew over their teeth like a sponge. The stone-foxes, which swarmed around our dwellings, became so bold and mischievous as to carry away and destroy different articles of provision and cloathing. One took a shoe, another a boot, a third a glove, and a fourth a coat; they even stole the iron implements. All our attempts to drive them away were ineffectual, and all the punishments we inflicted on them served only to increase their audacity: they forced themselves into our dwellings, and carried away whatever they could find; but their artful and comical tricks diverted us in spite of our misery.

November 14. I went in the afternoon with Plenifner and Betge on a hunting party: we killed four sea-otters, of which we threw the offal into a brook; the flesh, the skins, and entrails we brought home, which we did not reach till night. We made palatable food of the livers, kidneys, hearts, and flesh; but we put no value on the costly skins, and as we had no leisure to dry and prepare them, they were thrown aside until they were damaged and gnawed by the foxes. We now began to prize those articles which we had not esteemed

esteemed before, as hatchets, knives, punches, needles, thread, twine, shoes, shirts, stockings, poles, cords, &c.: we were sensible that rank or learning would give us here no preference, nor contribute to our maintenance, and therefore resolved to work without compulsion. To-day I offered the commander a young sea-otter, recommending him to have it dressed in different ways, as a substitute for other fresh meat. But he expressed a great antipathy to this kind of food, and preferred moor-hens, of which we sent him more than he could consume.

At this period we were employed in constructing our huts, and divided ourselves into three parties; the first went to the vessel to land the sick and provisions; the second drew large pieces of timber the distance of four versts; but I and a sick gunner remained at home. Besides performing the office of cook, I visited the captain, whose two servants could render him but little assistance, and attended the sick, supplying them with warm soup, and other comforts. This day the dwellings being finished, we conveyed thither many sick in the afternoon, who for want of room lay promiscuously on the ground with no other covering but their clothes. They were unable to assist each other; and nothing was heard but cries and groans, accompanied with imprecations on the authors of their misery.

November 15. All the remaining patients were landed. One of them called Boris Saend we took into our abode, and he recovered in three months. M. Kytrof also earnestly besought us to admit him into our society, as he was afraid to remain among the sailors, who continually reproached and threatened him; but as our dwelling was full, and he was considered as the author of our misfortune, his request was not complied with. In the ensuing

I

days

days our labour and wants increased. Lieutenant Waxel was also landed, so much afflicted with the scurvy, that we relinquished all hopes of his recovery: he received from us all the assistance in our power, and we anticipated his loss as an incalculable misfortune, because Kytrof, the next in command, was so detested by all, that confusion and insubordination would have ensued. We built a separate hut for him and some other patients, and lodged him in the barrack till it was finished. At this time, the party dispatched to examine the country returned, with the unpleasing intelligence that it was not connected with Kamtchatka to the westward, and that there were no traces of inhabitants. We were also in continual apprehension lest the incessant storms should drive our vessel to sea, and with it all our provisions: for, on account of the high sea, we were unable for several days to reach the ship, and in addition to our misfortunes, ten or twelve of the crew fell sick in consequence of their repeated exertions to remove the provisions and stores; on the whole, want, nakedness, cold, sickness, impatience, and despair were our daily guests.

At length, towards the end of November, a storm fortunately stranded the vessel, better than perhaps human skill could have effected, and revived our hopes of preserving the provisions and materials, as we were no longer compelled to wade through the sea; and we now reposed ourselves a few days to recover our strength, abstaining from all work except domestic occupations.

During this temporary respite, three persons were again dispatched to explore the country towards the east; for all hopes were not yet relinquished that we were on some part of Kamtchatka.

In

In the midst of these flattering expectations, several persons expired on shore; among them we greatly regretted the experienced pilot, Andrew Hasselberg, who had served at sea more than fifty years, and continued till the age of seventy in an unremitting discharge of his duty. Besides him died two grenadiers, a gunner, the master's servant, and a mariner.

On the 8th of December Captain Beering died, two days after we lost the mate, Chitaingof, and on the 8th of January Ensign Lagunof, who was the thirtieth and last of our company that died on the island.

As the lamentable end of the commander made different impressions on different people, I cannot omit a few particulars relative to his character and life.

Vitus Beering was a native of Denmark; he was an upright and pious Christian, a friendly quiet man, and universally beloved. After two voyages to the Indies, he entered in 1704 into the Russian service as lieutenant, and in 1741 was for his merit advanced to the rank of captain commander. He was employed in several expeditions, particularly the two voyages from Kamtchatka. Impartial persons must allow, that in this fatal voyage he used his utmost endeavours to perform his duty; he often complained that his strength was no longer adequate to such arduous and distant expeditions, and frequently lamented that a younger and more active person had not been appointed to the command. He was more distinguished for prudence and circumspection than for promptness of resolution, or activity of enterprise. His principal defect was extreme mildness, and too great facility in adopting the opinions of others, which occasioned the insubordination and want of

discipline so fatal to the expedition. As he frequently expressed his gratitude to the Almighty for his former success and recent happiness, his death was more lamentable, particularly when it is considered, that he might have survived had he reached Kamtchatka, and enjoyed the comforts of a warm dwelling and fresh provisions; whereas hunger, thirst, cold, fatigue, and despondency brought him to the grave. He had been long afflicted with a tertian ague, and a swelling in his feet, which being driven by cold to his vital parts, terminated in a gangrene. He displayed the most affecting resignation to the will of the Supreme Being, and enjoyed his understanding and speech to the last moment. He was convinced that we were driven on an unknown land, yet would not terrify others by declaring his opinion, but cherished their hopes, and encouraged their exertions. He died on the 8th of December, and was buried the ensuing day, according to the protestant ritual. His body was placed between his adjutant, a commissary, and two grenadiers, and we erected a cross over the grave to indicate the place of interment, and serve as a mark that we had taken possession of the country.

Soon after the death of our commander, the whole crew were sheltered from the severity of the winter in subterraneous dwellings, contiguous to each other, which were called the barrack, the hut of the lieutenant, mine, Alexei Iwanof's, and Luka Alexeef's.

On Christmas day most of the crew were recovered by the excellent water and the flesh of sea animals, and turned their principal attention to the means necessary for their deliverance. One of their chief employments was to hunt sea animals for the purpose of procuring food, and of saving their meal; which was distributed with the strictest œconomy. From the middle of November

vember to the beginning of May, the monthly allowance for each person was thirty pounds, and for the first two months several pounds of barley. In May and June it was reduced to twenty pounds, and totally withheld during July and August, as twenty-five pood were reserved for the voyage to Kamtchatka, of which twenty remained on our arrival at Avatcha. As the meal, however, had been kept for three years in leather bags, and had been drenched with the salt water, in which the gunpowder and other articles were dissolved, the taste was extremely nauseous; and until we were habituated to the use of it, produced disagreeable effects.

For some time we prepared the meal by making small cakes, and frying them with train oil, or the fat of the sea cow; but having erected two ovens before our departure, we once more enjoyed the luxury of eating bread. We had no difficulty in procuring food from the sea animals, which abounded in this part of the island, until the crew imprudently drove them from the neighbourhood, by wantonly and unnecessarily annoying them; hence our labour was considerably increased, and we were compelled to hunt at a great distance from our habitations.

To supply ourselves with fuel, was likewise a considerable labour, as the island produced nothing but willow bushes, and the drift-wood was often deeply buried in the snow. Till the end of March we were compelled to bring it from the distance of even fifteen or sixteen versts. Our load on these expeditions amounted from sixty to eighty pounds, besides our hatchets and kettles, and the necessary implements for mending our shoes and clothes. In April, however, we were relieved from this labour by the thaw, and breaking up of the vessel.

A re-

A regular distribution of our labour was also established by our party, and afterwards adopted by all; a German and a Russian daily hunted, others were employed in fetching wood, and a German and Russian staid at home to cook for their companions.

On the 26th of December the second party sent on discovery returned with the report that we were upon an island, the coast of which they had traced westward; but from the oars, parts of fish barrels, and other articles drifted on the strand, they inferred that Kamtchatka was at no great distance.

January 29. Our company killed the first sea-lion, the flesh of which was delicious, resembling veal, and the fat was like the marrow of an ox. On the 1st of February, a violent north-west wind and high tide drove our vessel into such a situation that we flattered ourselves we should float it at high water, could we recover our anchors; but on examination we found it filled with sand. We were however consoled for this disappointment, as it diminished the labour of breaking up the vessel.

In spring, the snow being melted, we could proceed over land to the south, where the otters and sea-dogs had not yet been frightened, and were found in great numbers. We often visited these parts, notwithstanding the distance, and steepness of the mountains. During one of these expeditions we nearly lost a third of our party. The 1st of April, the gunner Rosdig, the surgeon's mate Betge, the midshipman Sind, and a Coffac went on a hunting excursion, and were overtaken towards the evening with such a violent hurricane that no one could stand upon his legs, nor see a step before him, which was followed at night by a fall of snow not less than six feet in depth. After lying the whole

whole night under the snow, they had the greatest difficulty in working their way through it, to reach the shore; but the midshipman had left them, and seemed to be lost. During this time we were under the greatest alarm lest our companions had perished, but fortunately we had scarcely opened a passage to our hut, when three of the people arrived benumbed and speechless, and the surgeon's-mate was quite blind. We instantly undressed them, covered them with feather beds, and recovered them with tea. About an hour afterwards three of our men brought back the midshipman whom they discovered wandering near the shore. Having fallen during the night into a brook, his cloaths and his limbs were frozen, and we were apprehensive lest his hands and feet would mortify; but he gradually recovered, from the strength of his constitution, and the surgeon's-mate regained his sight in a week.

On the 25th of February the mildness of the season induced us to dispatch the mate Yufchin, with four men to explore the country westward; but in six days they only reached the northern point of land sixty versts from our abode, and after amusing themselves with hunting beavers, they returned on the 8th of March, with a false account that the steep rocks extending into the sea had prevented them from proceeding.

On the 10th of March it was resolved to send a party with Alexei Iwanof, one of the sailors, by Lefnaya Retfchka over the land to the south, and then along the shore till he should reach the end of the island or the continent, as we then thought we were stranded on Kronozki Nofs. These scouts began their journey the 15th of March, but returned unexpectedly the 19th, also with the report that they could not proceed farther southward on
account

account of the precipitous rocks. During this expedition they discovered some of the pieces of the sloop which was built the last winter at Avatcha, which the carpenter Akalof, recollected; they also saw an animal which from their description appeared to be a sea-bear.

On the 22d of March, the same party were ordered to proceed to the northernmost point, and from thence southward, unless they should meet with insurmountable obstacles: in that case they were to return to the north, or by crossing the mountain, continue till they reached the continent or discovered the termination of the island. In the latter case they should instantly return and prosecute the building of the vessel; but should they reach the continent or Kamtchatka, half of the party were to proceed to Avatcha, and the remainder bring the information to our abode.

I, together with three of my companions, went with this party, and crossed the country for the first time near Lefnaya Retschka. There we killed several sea-otters, which were so numerous that we might have slaughtered a hundred, had we not been more desirous of their flesh than of their costly skins.

On the 5th of April, during a gleam of favourable weather, Plenifner, and myself, with my Coffac, and a servant of Beering, went on a hunting expedition. Having killed as many sea-otters as we were able to carry, we made a fire in a cliff, where we proposed to pass the night. At midnight a violent hurricane arose, and the snow fell in such quantities that we should have been buried had we not run continually backwards and forwards. In the morning, after a long and fruitless search for shelter, we resigned ourselves

elves to our fate; but the Coffac fortunately discovered a large cavern, which seemed to have been formed by an earthquake. Here we entered with our provision and wood. This cave afforded a secure retreat from the weather, contained a cavity in which we could hide our provisions from the depredations of the stone-foxes, and was provided with an aperture which served the purpose of a chimney. This cave and the bay were named in compliment to me. The cavern was inhabited by numerous foxes, which retired on our approach through the chimney; but the smoke from our fire caused such sneezing and spitting amongst them, as gave rise to no small diversion; but at night they occasionally returned into the cave, and amused themselves with taking our caps and other similar gambols. On the 4th we returned to our abode with a rich booty, and were received with great delight by our companions, who thought us lost.

Some days before, a hunting party was undertaken by the mate Yuschin, three men, and the ship carpenter (who had engaged to build a new vessel from the wreck), and upon whom therefore all our hopes of deliverance depended. Having sought a retreat from the violence of the storm in a cave near the shore, the high water confined them seven days without nourishment and fuel, and they did not return till the ninth day, when we thought them either drowned or buried in the snow, which fell from the mountains.

On coming home the 8th of April, we heard the agreeable news, that this useful person was returned: the mariner and his party had also arrived on the 6th of April, with the information that we were really upon an island, and that they descried high mountains to the north-east. According to the latitude

K

I think

I think this high land could not be considered as part of America, but as another island unknown at Kamtchatka *.

As we had no other chance of reaching Kamtchatka than by building a small vessel, we subscribed on the 9th of April the following resolutions: 1. The twelve men who could work with the hatchet should assist the carpenter. 2. The others (except the two officers and myself) should alternately hunt and work. 3. The provisions should be deposited in one place, and every morning a non-commissioned officer should give the cook of each party his share, that the carpenter might suffer no want." On the following day the first preparations were made; the vessel was cleared, and the materials put on shore. Whet-stones were cut and put into troughs, the instruments ground, the forge constructed, iron claws, wedges, and hammers forged, wood collected and charcoal made, which last occasioned the greatest delay.

As the distance of the place where we hunted was eighteen or twenty versts, we were greatly relieved by catching two sea-bears, weighing twenty pood each, two or three of which were sufficient for a week's provision. We were still more benefited by a fresh whale thrown up five versts westward from our dwelling on the 20th of April; it was fifteen fathoms long, and produced so much oil and lard that some barrels of it remained at our departure. The flesh of the young sea-bears and of female bears maintained us during May and part of June.

* Steller was in the right; for this high land seen to the N. E. was Copper Island.—Pallas.

The 5th of May the beginning of our vessel, and future deliverance was made, by laying the stern and fore-posts of the keel, which was celebrated at the invitation of Lieutenant Waxel, for want of other liquor, with Mongolian Saturn, or tea-soup, prepared with flour and butter.

The mild weather in the spring having dissolved the snow, much drift wood was found on shore, which furnished charcoal sufficient for the forge; we also procured many herbs and roots, which afforded us an agreeable and wholesome change of diet. On the 11th of May and following days, it not only thawed, but the continual rain with south-east winds caused such an inundation that the rivulets overflowed our subterraneous dwellings to the depth of two feet; we therefore built summer huts above ground. The construction of our vessel was delayed on this account, for a few days, but was again resumed and our ardour increased, as we hoped to sail for Kamtchatka in August. The maintenance of the people being facilitated by the flesh of sea-cows, which we caught in great abundance, we were no longer under the necessity of hunting, and the men were thus relieved from undertaking troublesome journeys over the mountains, without shoes or clothes.

By the constant exertions, and encouragement of Lieutenant Waxel, the vessel, which was thirty-six feet long in the keel, and forty-two over the stern*, was ready to be launched in July.

From that time to the 13th of August we were employed in preparing the tackling, and building the frame for launching the vessel, which was a

* So in the original, but probably an error.



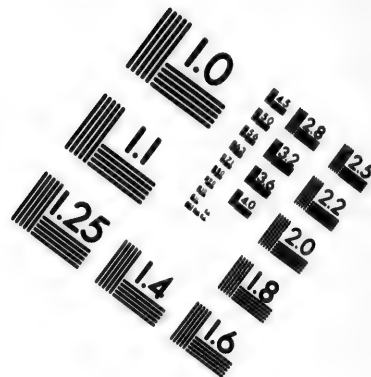
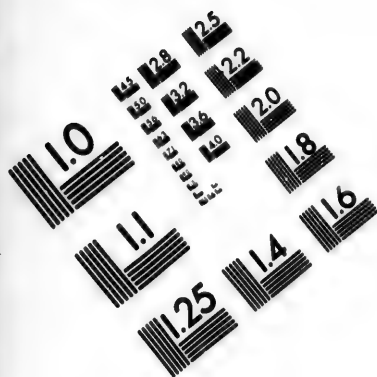
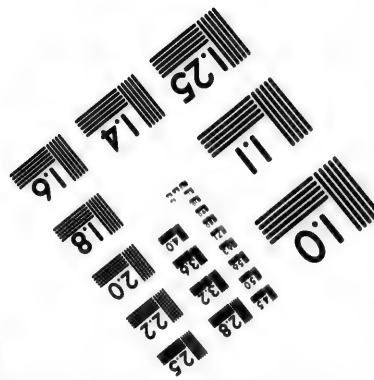
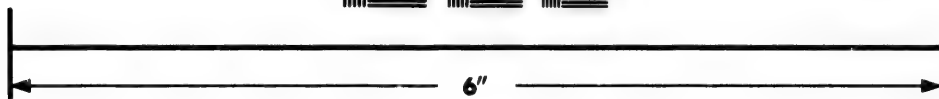
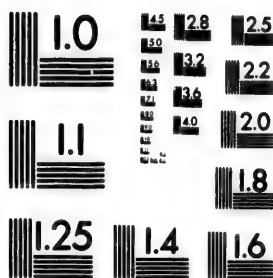


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

0
1.6
1.8
2.0
2.2
2.5
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
4.5
5.0
5.6
6.3
7.1
8.0
9.0
10.0
11.2
12.5
14.0
16.0
18.0
20.0
22.5
25.0
28.0
31.5
36.0
40.0
45.0
50.0
56.0
63.0
71.0
80.0
90.0
100.0

1.0
1.1
1.2
1.3
1.4
1.5
1.6
1.7
1.8
1.9
2.0
2.1
2.2
2.3
2.4
2.5
2.6
2.7
2.8
2.9
3.0
3.1
3.2
3.3
3.4
3.5
3.6
3.7
3.8
3.9
4.0
4.1
4.2
4.3
4.4
4.5
4.6
4.7
4.8
4.9
5.0
5.1
5.2
5.3
5.4
5.5
5.6
5.7
5.8
5.9
6.0
6.1
6.2
6.3
6.4
6.5
6.6
6.7
6.8
6.9
7.0
7.1
7.2
7.3
7.4
7.5
7.6
7.7
7.8
7.9
8.0
8.1
8.2
8.3
8.4
8.5
8.6
8.7
8.8
8.9
9.0
9.1
9.2
9.3
9.4
9.5
9.6
9.7
9.8
9.9
10.0

difficult undertaking, as we were ill provided with materials, particularly wood, which was conveyed from the most distant parts of the shore. Meanwhile some raised a store-house to preserve the remainder of the materials; some built an oven, and baked biscuits for the voyage; others prepared barrels; some took soundings, and not a single person was idle in promoting our deliverance from this desert isle.

On the 8th of August, every thing was in order and ready for the voyage. After offering up public prayers for success in our enterprise, we gave the vessel the name of St. Peter, and all assisted in launching it. But to our great consternation the vessel hung on the stocks, and it was not without difficulty that we floated it the following day. We continued our exertions night and day; on the 11th the vessel was masted and rigged; then the water and provisions were put on board, and finally the remains of the baggage. Meanwhile a small boat was constructed by the carpenter. Our provision consisted of four pounds of butter for each man, twenty-five pood of rye-meal, five barrels of pickled sea-cow or manati flesh, two pood of peas, and a barrel of pickled beef, which notwithstanding our necessities had been saved for our return.

August 13, we quitted our dwellings with mixed sensations of hope and fear, and repaired to the vessel, which was to carry us home, or terminate our existence. The vessel was so small that the crew were obliged to creep over each other as they lay down in their respective places; Lieutenant Waxel, M. Kyroff, I, and the son of the lieutenant, had the best birth in the cabin; the other forty-two men occupied the hold, which was so full of water barrels, provisions and baggage, that there was scarcely room to lie down. The crew
being

being divided into three watches, two places were assigned to three men; but as the vessel was still too small we threw beds and clothes into the sea. We had scarcely reached the vessel before we observed the stone foxes busy in examining our dwellings, and dividing the remains of the provisions which we left behind.

August 14. Having addressed a fervent prayer for the assistance of the Almighty, we weighed anchor, and as the west wind was favourable to pass the east point of the island, we chose the direct course to Avatcha, though the mouth of the Kamtchatka river was twice as near, and our vessel ill calculated to sustain an autumnal storm. We advanced so far with a moderate wind, that in the evening we reached the south-east part of our island. The weather being pleasant, we passed the day in coasting the isle, and recollecting the names we had given to each vale and mountain, which we had so often, and with so much difficulty traversed, in search of provisions.

Late in the evening we were a-breast of the farthest point of land, and on Sunday the 15th, the wind being moderate in the forenoon, we still defcried the south part of the island, which, as the wind increased, we lost sight of towards night. We continued now steering between west and south to Avatcha, with favourable wind and weather. But at midnight we were much terrified, as we perceived water in the vessel, which being crowded, it was difficult to find the leak. Having omitted to place kettles under the pumps, they were soon choaked by the chips in the hold, and the danger increased every moment, the wind being high and the vessel weakly built. In this alarming situation the sails were furled, and the place cleared; some bailed
out

out the water, and others threw the balls and cartridges overboard. Fortunately the carpenter succeeded in discovering and stopping the leak, and we were providentially saved.

August 16. We pursued our course, and early on Tuesday the 17th saw the continent of Kamtchatka. We made the land near Cape Kronozkoi, but the weather being foggy we did not see it till we were within a mile of the shore. It was notwithstanding, resolved to steer for the harbour from which we were not less than thirty miles. On account of contrary winds and calms nine days were spent in tacking, and it was not till the night of the 26th of August, after continually rowing for twenty-four hours, that we came into the bay at night, and entered on the 21st in the evening the long wished for harbour.

Notwithstanding our deliverance and happy arrival, the accounts received from a Kamtchadal at the entrance gave us great affliction. Being supposed either dead or shipwrecked, the greater part of our property had fallen into the hands of strangers. Mean-while we were so accustomed to misery, that instead of new projects we only thought of continuing our usual manner of living, and considered our present situation as a dream. After offering up on the following day hearty thanks to Heaven, in a common prayer, for our miraculous preservation and happy return, the sea-officers resolved to proceed immediately to Okotsk. But I took my leave of them, and walked thirty miles to Bolcheretskoi Ostrog, where I safely arrived in the bosom of my family the 5th of September, and celebrated the birth day of our most gracious emperors. After some weeks the report reached Bolcheretsk that the vessel

FROM 1711 TO 1741.

71

vessel appointed for Okotsk was driven back into the harbour: but as the commander neglected to send the account of our return by the galliot which failed after to Okotsk, eight months elapsed before it was known at Petersburg that we were not dead.

SEC-

SECTION 2.

Remarks on Steller's Narrative, and Conjectures relative to the Parts of America touched at by Beering and Tchelekof.

According to Steller's narrative, Beering first discovered the continent of America in latitude 59° . and some minutes, and longitude 49° . or five hundred dutch miles, from Avatcha, or 216° . from Ferro.

Should this computation be deemed accurate, it would carry them no farther than that part of the American continent which lies near Shoal Nefs, considerably to the west of Cook's River. There was probably little deficiency in the latitude, but from the authority of Steller himself we may infer that the longitude was extremely erroneous; for he observes that many errors concerning the distance of the two continents must have occurred, as no notice was taken of the impediments arising from currents; it likewise appears, that no astronomical observations were made; but the longitude computed from the ship's reckoning. Hence Muller says, Beering discovered the continent of America in 58° . $28'$. latitude, and 50° . east longitude from Avatcha according to computation, and Tschirikoff in 56° . latitude, and 60° . longitude; but he supposes that both may have been mistaken, for if we compare their voyage thither, with their return, it seems that Captain Beering was on the coast of America, in longitude 60° . from Avatcha, or 236° . from Ferro, and Tschirikoff in 65° . from Avatcha, or 241° . from Ferro.

Con-

Considering these uncertain data, and the scanty information contained in Muller's Account, it is no wonder that doubts should be entertained, whether Beering and Tchirikof reached America; and that since later discoveries have removed those doubts, subsequent navigators have not ascertained the precise parts which they reached. For some of the late Russian navigators lay down the utmost limits of Beering's Voyage, too near the western shore of Montague island, at the entrance of Prince William's Sound, place Mount St. Elias upon that island, and suppose the part of the continent first discovered by Beering, to be that land which lies between Prince William's Sound, and Cook's Inlet; but this supposition is wholly incompatible with both Muller's and Steller's Narrative.

Captain Cook, after candidly allowing the difficulty of ascertaining the discoveries of the Russians from a confused and uncertain narrative, conjectures that Beering reached the continent a little to the northward of Cape Fairweather, where he perceived an appearance of a bay and an island off the south point of it, that was covered with wood. He considers this bay as situated in latitude $59^{\circ} 18'$ and longitude 221° east from Greenwich, and distinguishes it by the name of Beering's bay: the high mountain which he saw in $58^{\circ} 53'$ at forty leagues distance, he calls Beering's Mount St. Elias.

Vancouver however asserts that no such bay or island exists in that latitude, and that Cook was led into the mistake by the great distance at which he saw the coast. He therefore places Beering's Bay a little farther to the north-west, at Dixon's Admiralty Bay*, in latitude $59^{\circ} 33'$ and longitude $220^{\circ} 30'$.

* Called by Pérouse, Baie de Monti. Tome 2, p. 160, 4to. edition.

west from Greenwich. He censures Portlock and Dixon for laying down Beering's and Admiralty Bays as two bays, declares that the minute examination with which he surveyed the coast, enabled him to assert, that between Capes Suckling and Fairweather, Admiralty Bay is the only bay, which according to Kytrof's description, "*affords between islands a convenient anchoring place, secure from all winds;*" that its latitude accords nearly with that assigned by the Russians to Beering's discovery; hence he supposes it to be the same as that described by Cook, calls it Beering's Bay, and considers a cove denominated by Dixon, Port Mulgrave, as the anchoring place explored by Kytrof. But notwithstanding the minuteness of Vancouver's examination, Cook is justified in placing a bay which he calls Beering's Bay, between Admiralty Bay and Cape Fairweather; for exactly in the latitude and longitude mentioned by Cook, La Pérouse discovered a bay with one or two islands off its south point, into which a river empties itself, called by him Beering's River.*

But it sufficiently appears from Steller's Narrative, that neither of these bays could be that discovered by Beering and explored by Kytrof; for neither of them is distinguished by that long, narrow, and mountainous island lying off the continent, which was examined by Steller, and is too remarkable to be overlooked.

In fact, the only bay hitherto discovered between Prince William's Sound and Cape Fairweather, which answers Steller's description, and by its position suits the course of the voyage, is Cook's Comptroller's Bay, situated near the

* Voyage de la Pérouse, tom. 2, p. 142.—144.

latitude of 60° . and longitude 216° . $20'$. east from Greenwich, or 234° . from Fero. At the mouth of this bay is a long narrow and mountainous island, called by Cook, Kaye's Island, which is separated from the eastern extremity of Cape Suckling, by a strait about a mile and a half broad, with a smaller island towards the west, denominated by Vancouver Wingham's Island, and between which there is good anchorage. Towards the entrance of the bay are several rocky islets; within are many small islands, and a large river empties itself towards the north-western extremity. Vancouver asserts, that Comp-troller's Bay, and Kaye's Island, could not be the places first discovered by Beering, because "that bay is rendered inaccessible by shoals, and incapable affording any shelter to shipping." But he makes this assertion without sufficient evidence, and the survey of those parts taken by Mr. Puget, under his orders, proves that there was a good passage between Wingham's and Kaye's Island, and the continent, and good anchorage in the vicinity of both these islands; there is no reason therefore to suppose that Beering's vessel, which only drew nine feet water, could not have passed the shoal into the bay, for Mr. le Mesurier, who sounded the passage, found at least $2\frac{1}{4}$ fathoms of water at the edge of the shoal. The assertion that it is incapable of affording shelter to shipping can only be proved from experience, and Cook describes it as *covered from almost all winds*. Mr. Puget found excellent anchorage on the east side of Wingham's Island, and the place where the Chatham anchored off Kaye's Island, was well protected from the most prevailing winds. It is not probable, therefore, when we consider the form of the bay, and the protection afforded by Kaye's and Wingham's Islands, and a spit of land extending from Cape Suckling to the north-west, that it should not afford protection to a small vessel like Beering's, between the islands, which, according to Cook, it contains. The aspect of the country, partly low and sandy,

sandy, partly elevated tracts of thick forest, and rising into mountains covered with snow, answers to the description of Steller, and the stupendous summit of Mount St. Elias, resembles the mountain noticed by Steller, as the highest he had ever seen, and which he discerned at the distance of sixteen dutch miles from land. Cook observed Mount St. Elias at the distance of forty leagues, and Vancouver says, "till eleven at night Mount St. Elias was yet within our visible horizon, appearing like a lofty mountain, although the distance of one hundred and fifty geographical miles*."

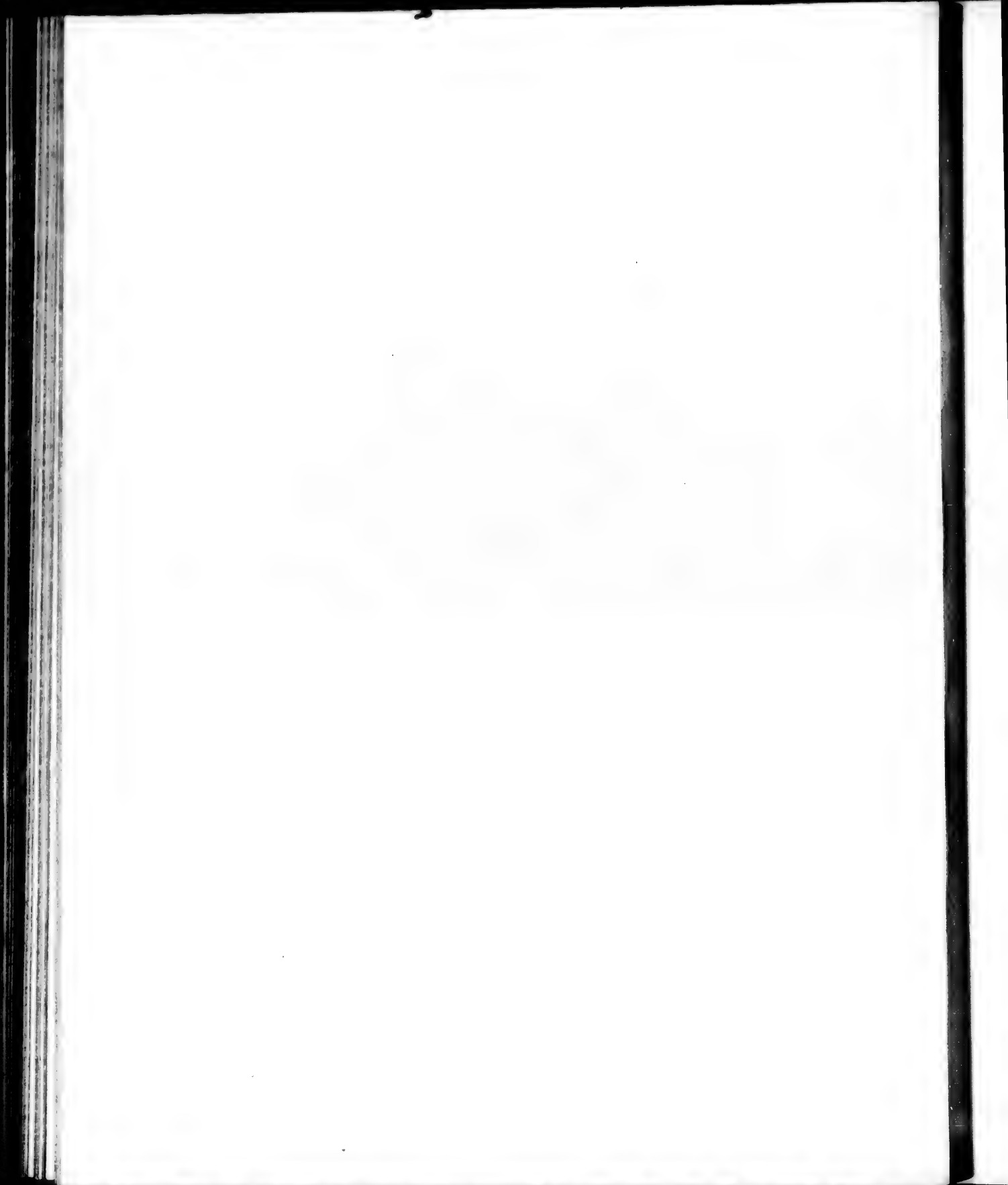
After endeavouring to reconcile the accounts of Muller and Steller, and comparing their narratives with Cook's and Vancouver's journals, I am induced to conjecture, that Beering first discovered the continent of America in the neighbourhood of Kaye's Island, and after much opposition from contrary winds, anchored either between Wingham's and Kaye's Island, or between Kaye's Island and Cape Suckling. They remained only one day on this spot, during which Steller explored Kaye's Island, and Kytrof discovered the anchorage in the bay. Kaye's Island was probably the Cape St. Elias. Sailing from Kaye's Island, they continued along the coast until they fell in with the sand-bank, which, according to Vancouver, stretches from the

* Vol. 3, p. 210.

I am informed by Mr. Menzies, who accompanied Vancouver, that according to geometrical observations taken by the commander of the Spanish expedition, it was 2,792 toises in height, or 16,752 French feet; but according to Dagelet the geographer, who accompanied La Pérouse, 1,980, or 11,880 French feet.—*Voyage de la Pérouse*, tom. 2, p. 141. If we credit the Spanish observations, it exceeds the height of Mont Blanc by 2,406 French feet; if Dagelet's, it is lower by 4,872 French feet.—(See *Travels in Switzerland*, Letter 36). An interesting view of this stupendous mountain, which seems wholly covered with snow, is given in Vancouver's Voyage, vol. 3, p. 204.

north-

north-eastern point of Hinchinbrook Island to Cape Suckling. Steering instantly south to avoid this shoal, they missed the entrance of Prince William's Sound, and sailing through the open sea for several days, anchored under a woody island, tolerably large, which Beering called Toomanoi Ostrof or Foggy Island, and which was probably that lying in latitude $56^{\circ}. 10'$ and longitude $202^{\circ}. 45'$ east from Greenwich. Directing their course due west, they discovered that land in 56° latitude which is now called Alaska. Being prevented from running either north or west by the prolongation of the continent, they sailed south and south-west, and became entangled among the Schumagin Islands, which are situated in latitude $55^{\circ}. 25'$. When they had cleared these islands, which employed them several days, they seem to have passed south of the Aleutian and Fox Islands, occasionally discovering land, which they considered as the continent, and after being driven about by violent storms, mistook their course, and were shipwrecked on Beering's Island.



FROM 1711 TO 1741.

79

ACCOUNT
OF THE
RUSSIAN DISCOVERIES.

PERIOD II.

From 1741 to 1778.

CHAP. I.

*Conquest of Siberia—Commencement of the New Discoveries—Their Progress
—Encouraged by the Empress—Position of the New-discovered Islands.*

A THIRST after riches incited the Spaniards to the discovery of America, and turned the attention of other maritime nations to that quarter; and the same passion occasioned, about the middle of the sixteenth century, the discovery and conquest of Northern Asia, a country before unknown to Europeans. The foundation of this conquest was laid by the celebrated Yermac*, at the head of a band of adventurers, less civilized, but less

* The reader will find an account of the conquest of Siberia, related in the subsequent part of this work,

inhuman

inhuman than the conquerors of America. By the accession of this vast territory, now known by the name of Siberia, the Russians acquired an extent of empire never before attained by any nation.

The first project for making discoveries in that tempestuous sea, which lies between Kamtchatka and America, was conceived and planned by Peter I. the greatest sovereign who ever sat upon the Russian throne, until it was adorned by Catherine the second. The nature and completion of this project under his immediate successors, are well known to the public from the relation of the celebrated Muller. No sooner had Beering and Tchirikof opened their way to islands abounding in valuable furs, than private merchants engaged with ardor in similar expeditions; and, within a period of ten years, more important discoveries were made by individuals, at their own private cost, than had been hitherto effected by all the expensive efforts of the crown.

Soon after the return of Beering's crew, the inhabitants of Kamtchatka ventured over to the island, on which Beering was shipwrecked and died, where sea-otters and other sea-animals resorted in great numbers. *Mednoi Ostruf*, or Copper Island, which takes that appellation from large masses of native copper found upon the beach, and which is seen from Beering's Isle, was an easy and speedy discovery.

These two small uninhabited spots were for some time the only islands known, until a scarcity of land and sea-animals occasioned other expeditions. Several of the vessels sent out upon these voyages were driven by stormy weather to the south-east; by which means the Aleutian Isles, situated about
the

the 195th * degree of longitude, and but moderately peopled, were first explored.

From 1745, when these islands were first visited, until 1750, when the first tribute of furs was brought to Okotsk, the government was not fully informed of their discovery. In that year, Lebedef was commander of Kamtschatka. From 1755 to 1760, Captain Theredof and Lieutenant Kaskharef were his successors. In 1760, Feodor Ivanovitch Soimonof, governor of Tobolsk, turned his attention to those islands, and, the same year, Captain Ruitshof, at Okotsk, instructed Lieutenant Shmaleff, the same officer who was afterwards commander in Kamtschatka, to promote expeditions in those seas.

The present Empress (to whom every circumstance which contributes to aggrandize the Russian empire is an object of attention) has given new life to these discoveries. The merchants who engaged in them have been animated by rewards, and the importance and true position of the Russian islands have been ascertained by an expensive voyage † made by order of the crown.

Meanwhile, we may rest assured, that several modern geographers have

* The author reckons, throughout this treatise, the longitude from the first meridian of the isle of Ferro. The longitude and latitude, which he gives to the Fox Islands, correspond exactly with those in the general map of Russia. The longitude of Beering's Island, Copper Island, and of the Aleutian Isles, are somewhat different. See advertisement relating to the Charts.

† The author here alludes to the secret expedition of Captain Krenitzin and Levashef, whose journal and chart were sent, by order of the Empress of Russia, to Dr. Robertson, and are given in a subsequent chapter of this work.

erred in advancing America too much to the west, and in questioning the extent of Siberia eastwards, as laid down by the Russians. It appears, indeed, evident, that the accounts and even conjectures of Muller, concerning the position of those distant regions, are more and more confirmed by facts; in the same manner as the justness of his supposition concerning the coast of the sea of Okotsk * has been lately established. With respect to the extent of Siberia, it appears almost beyond a doubt, from the most recent observations, that its eastern extremity is situated beyond 200°. of longitude. In regard to the western coast of America, all the navigations to the new-discovered islands evidently shew, that between 50 and 60°. of latitude, that continent advances no where nearer to Asia than the coasts touched at by Beering and Tchirikof, or about 236°. of longitude.

As to the new-discovered islands, no credit must be given to a chart published in the Geographical Calender of St. Petersburg for 1774; nor is the antient chart of the discoveries, published by the Imperial Academy, which seems to have been drawn up from mere reports, more deserving of attention.

The late navigators give a far different description of the northern Archipelago. From their accounts we learn, that Beering's Island is situated due east from Kamtschatkoi Nofs, in the 185th degree of longitude. Near

* Muller formerly conjectured, that the coast of the sea of Okotsk stretched south-west towards the river Ud, and from thence to the mouth of the Amoor south-east; and the truth of this conjecture has been since confirmed by a coasting voyage made by Captain Synd.

it is Copper Island; and, at some distance from them, east-south-east, are three small islands, named by the inhabitants, Attak, Semitsi, and Shemiya: these are properly the Aleutian isles; they stretch from west-north-west towards east-south-east, in the same direction as Beering's and Copper Islands, in the longitude of 195° . and latitude 54° .

To the north-east, at the distance of six or eight hundred versts, lies another group of six or more islands, known by the name of the Andreanoffskie Ostrova.

South-east, or east-by-south of these, at the distance of about fifteen degrees, and north by east of the Aleutian, begins the chain of Lyffe Ostrova, or Fox Islands: this chain of rocks and isles stretches east-north-east between 56 and 61° . of north latitude, from 211° . of longitude most probably to the continent of America; and in a line of direction, which crosses with that in which the Aleutian isles lie. The largest and most remarkable of these islands are Umnak, Aghunafhka, or, as it is commonly shortened, Unalafhka, Kadyak, and Alagfhak.

Of these and the Aleutian Isles, the distance and position are tolerably well ascertained by ships reckonings, and latitudes taken by pilots. But the situation of the Andreanoffsky Isles* is still doubtful, though probably their direction is east and west; and some of them may unite with that part of the Fox Islands which is most contiguous to the opposite continent.

* These are the same islands which are called, by Mr. Strehlin, Anadirsky Islands, from their supposed vicinity to the river Anadyr, and are probably part of the Fox Islands.

No vessels have yet reached the main land of America, though possibly the time is not far distant when some of the Russian adventurers will fall in with that coast. More to the north perhaps, at least as high as 70° latitude, the continent of America may approach the coast of the Tschutski, and form a large promontory, accompanied with islands, which have no connection with any of the preceding ones. That such a promontory really exists, and advances near to Tschukotskoi Nofs, can hardly be doubted; at least it seems to be confirmed by all the latest accounts which have been procured from those parts. That prolongation, therefore, of America, which by Delisle is made to extend westward, and is laid down opposite to Kamtchatka between 50 and 60° latitude, must be entirely removed; for many of the ships whose voyages are related in this collection, passed through that part of the ocean where this imaginary continent was placed.

It is even more than probable, that the Aleutian, and some of the Fox Islands, are the same which Beering fell in with upon his return; though, from the unsteadiness of his course, their true position could not be exactly laid down in the chart of that expedition*.

As the sea of Kamtchatka is now so much frequented, these conjectures cannot remain long undecided; and it is only to be wished, that some expeditions were made north-east, to discover the nearest coasts of America. For there is no reason to expect success by taking any other direction; as

* This error is however so small, and particularly with respect to the more eastern coasts and islands, such as Cape Hermogenes, Toomanoi, Shumagin's Island, and mountain of St. Dolmat, that their situation corresponds with that of the Fox Islands in the general map of Russia, prefixed to this work.

all the vessels, which have steered a more southerly course, have sailed through an open sea, without perceiving signs of land.

A full and judicious account of all the discoveries hitherto made in the Eastern ocean may be expected from Muller*. Meanwhile, the following narrative, extracted from original papers, and procured from the best intelligence, may be acceptable to the public; and induce the Russians to publish more circumstantial relations. Besides, the reader will here find a more authentic and accurate account than has been published in the calendar of St. Petersburg†; and several mistakes in that memoir are corrected.

* Muller has already arranged several of the journals, and sent them to the board of admiralty at St. Petersburg, where they are at present kept, together with the charts of the respective voyages.

† A German copy of the treatise alluded to in the text, was sent, by its author, Mr. Stehlin, Counsellor of State to the Empress of Russia, to the late Dr. Maty; and it is mentioned in the Philosophical Transactions for 1774, under the following title: "A new Map and Preliminary Description of the New Archipelago in the North, discovered a few years ago by the Russians in the N. E. beyond Kamtschatka." A translation of this treatise was published the same year by Heydinger.

CHAP. 2.

Voyages in 1745—First discovery of the Aleütian Isles by Michael Nevodtsikof.

A VOYAGE made in the year 1745 by Emilian Baffof scarcely deserves notice, as he only reached Beering's Island, and two smaller ones to the south, and returned on the 31st of July, 1746.

The first remarkable voyage was undertaken in the year 1745. The vessel was a Shitik named Eudokia, fitted out at the expence of Aphanassei Tsebaeffkoi, Jacob Tsiuprof, and others; she sailed from the Kamtchatka river September 19, under the command of Michael Nevodtsikof, a native of Tobolsk. Having discovered three unknown islands, they wintered upon one of them, in order to kill sea-otters, which were numerous. These were undoubtedly the nearest* Aleütian islands: the language of the inhabitants was not understood by a Kamtchatkan interpreter. For the purpose therefore of learning this language, they carried back with them one of the islanders, and presented him to the chancery of Bolcheretsk, with a false account of their proceedings. This islander was examined as soon as he had acquired a slight knowledge of the Russian language, and, as it is said, gave the following report. He was called Temnac, and the name of the

* The small group lying S. E. of Beering's Island, are the real Aleütian isles: they are sometimes called the Nearest Aleütian Isles; and the Fox Islands, the Furthest Aleütian Isles.

island of which he was a native, was Att. At some distance from thence is a great island called Sabaya, of which the inhabitants are denominated Kogii, who, as the Russians understood or thought they understood him, made crosses, had books and fire arms, and navigated in baidars or leathern canoes. At no great distance from the island where the Russians wintered, were two well inhabited islands: the first lying E. S. E. and S. E. by S., the second E. and E. by S. Temnac was baptized under the name of Paul, and sent to Okotsk.

As the misbehaviour of the ship's crew towards the natives was suspected, partly from the loss of several men, and partly from the report of those Russians, who were not concerned in the disorderly behaviour of their companions, a strict enquiry was instituted; and the following circumstances transpired from the relations of the commander and some of the crew.

After six days sailing, they came in sight of the first island on the 24th of September, at mid-day, passed it, and towards evening discovered the second island; where they lay at anchor until morning.

On the 25th several inhabitants appearing on the coast, the pilot rowed towards shore in the small boat, with an intention to land; but, observing their numbers increase to about an hundred, he was afraid of venturing, although they beckoned to him. He contented himself, therefore, with flinging some needles amongst them, and the islanders, in return threw into the boat some sea-fowl of the cormorant kind. The captain endeavoured to hold a conversation with them by means of the interpreters, but no one understood their language. The crew now attempted to row the vessel out
to

to sea; but the wind being contrary, they were driven to the other side of the island, where they cast anchor.

The next day Tsiuprof, having landed with some of the crew to look for water, met several inhabitants: he gave them some tobacco and small Chinese pipes, and received in return a present of a stick, upon which the head of a seal was carved. They endeavoured to wrest his musket from him, but without effect; and as he was retiring towards the boat, they seized the rope which fastened it to the shore. This attack compelled Tsiuprof to fire, and having wounded one person in the hand, they quitted their hold, and he rowed back to the ship. The savages instantly threw off their clothes, carried the wounded person into the sea, and washed him. In consequence of this encounter, the ship's crew would not venture to winter at this place; but rowed back to the other island, where they came to anchor.

The next morning Tsiuprof and Shaffyrin landing with a larger party, observed traces of inhabitants; but meeting none, returned to the ship, and coasted the island. The following day the Cossack Shekurdin went on shore, accompanied by five sailors, two of whom he sent back with a supply of water, and remained with the others to hunt sea-otters. At night the party came to some dwellings inhabited by five families; but, upon their approach the natives abandoned their huts, and hid themselves among the rocks. Shekurkin having returned to the ship, was again sent on shore with a larger company, to discover a proper place for laying up the vessel during winter. In their way they observed fifteen islanders upon a height, and threw them some fragments of dried fish, in order to induce them to approach nearer; but as this overture did not succeed, Tsiuprof ordered some of the crew to seize

one

one of them for the purpose of learning their language. This order was executed, notwithstanding the resistance of the islanders with their bone-spears; and the Russians immediately returned with their prisoner to the ship. They were soon afterwards driven to sea by a violent storm, and beat about from the 2d to the 9th of October, during which time they lost their anchor and boat: at length they came back to the same island, where they passed the winter.

Soon after landing, they found in an adjacent hut the bodies of two inhabitants, who were probably killed in the last encounter. In their way the Russians were met by an old woman who had been taken prisoner, and set at liberty. She was accompanied with thirty-four islanders of both sexes, dancing to the sound of a drum, and brought a present of coloured earth. Pieces of cloth, thimbles, and needles, were distributed among them in return, and they parted amicably. Before the end of October, the same persons, together with the old woman and several children, returned dancing as before; brought birds, fish, and other provision, and passed the night with the Russians. Soon after their departure, Tsiuprof, Shaffyrin, and Nevoditsikof, accompanied with seven of the crew, followed them, and found them among the rocks. In this interview the natives behaved in the most friendly manner; and exchanged a baidar and some skins for two shirts. They were observed to have hatchets of sharpened stone, and needles of bone; they lived upon the flesh of sea-otters, seals, and sea-lions, which they killed with clubs and bone-lances.

On the 24th of October, a party of ten persons, sent by Tsiuprof under the command of Larion Belayef, treating the inhabitants in a hostile man-

N

ner,

ner, they defended themselves with their bone-lances. This resistance gave the Russians a pretext for firing, and they killed fifteen men, in order to seize their women.

Shocked at these barbarous proceedings, Shekurdin retired privately to the ship, and made a report to Tsiuprof, who countenanced instead of punishing these cruelties, as he was incensed against the islanders for refusing to give him an iron bolt, which he saw in their possession. He had even committed several acts of hostility against them, and had formed the horrid design of poisoning them with a mixture of corrosive sublimate. To preserve appearances however, he dispatched Shekurdin and Nevodtsikof to reproach Belayef for his disorderly conduct; but sent him at the same time a supply of ammunition.

The Russians continued upon this island, where they caught many sea-otters, until the 14th of September, 1746; but dreading the resentment of the natives, they put to sea with an intention of seeking for some uninhabited islands. They were however overtaken by a violent storm, and were driven about until the 30th of October, when their vessel struck upon a rocky shore, and was wrecked, with the loss of almost all the tackle, and the greater part of the furs. Worn out with cold and fatigue, they ventured, the 1st of November, to penetrate into the interior of the country, which they found rocky and uneven, and were informed by some of the natives that the island was called Karaga, and that the inhabitants were tributary to Russia, and of the Koriac tribe. The islanders behaved to them with great kindness, until Belayef attempted to seduce the wife of the chief. The woman gave intel-

intelligence to her husband, and the natives threatened the whole crew with immediate death; but means were found to pacify them.

The 30th of May, 1747, a party of Olotorians made a descent upon the island in three baidars, and attacked the natives; but, after some loss on both sides, they went away. They soon after re-appeared with a larger force, and were again compelled to retire; but as they threatened to return in a short time, and destroy all the inhabitants who paid tribute, the islanders advised the Russians to depart, and assisted them in building two baidars. They put to sea the 27th of June, and landed on the 21st of July at Kamtchatka, with the remainder of their cargo, consisting of three hundred and twenty sea-otters, of which they paid the tenth into the customs. Twelve men were lost during this expedition.

CHAP. 3.

Successive Voyages, from 1747 to 1753, to Beering's and Copper Island, and to the Aleütian Isles—Voyage of Emilian Yugof—Of the Boris and Glebb—Of Andrew Tolstykh to the Aleütian Isles, 1749—Voyage of Vorobief, 1750—Of Novikof and Baccof from Anadyrsk—Shipwreck upon Beering's Island—Voyage of Durnef, in the St. Nicholas, 1754—Narrative of the Voyage—Description of the Aleütian Isles—Some Account of the Inhabitants.

IN 1747 * two vessels sailed from the Kamtchatka river, according to a permission granted by the chancery of Bolcheretfk for hunting sea-otters. One was fitted out by Andrew Wfevidof, and carried forty-six men, besides eight Cossacs: the other belonged to Feodor Kolodilof, Andrew Tolstykh, and company; her crew, consisted of forty-one Russians and Kamtchadals, with six Cossacs.

The latter vessel sailed the 20th of October, and was forced by stress of weather and other accidents, to winter at Beering's Island. From thence they departed May the 31st, 1748, and touched at another small island to take in water and other necessaries. They then steered S. E. for a considerable way without discovering any new islands; and, being in great want of pro-

* It may be necessary to inform the reader, that, in this and the two following chapters, some circumstances are occasionally omitted, which are found in the original. These omissions relate chiefly to the names of some of the partners engaged in the equipments, and to a detail of immaterial occurrences prior to the departure of the vessels.

visions,

vifions, returned to the Kamtchatka river, Auguft 14, with a cargo of two hundred and fifty old fea-otter fkins, about one hundred young ones, and one hundred and forty-eight *peſſi* or arctic fox fkins, which were all killed on Beering's Iſland.

We have no account of Wſevidof's voyage, except that he reached an uninhabited iſland, probably one of the neareſt Aleutian Iſles, and returned the 25th of July, 1749, with the fkins of one thouſand and forty fea-otters, and two thouſand arctic foxes.

Emilian Yugof, merchant of Yakutſk, obtained from the ſenate of St. Petersburg permiffion to fit out four veſſels for himſelf and his associates, and procured the excluſive privilege of hunting fea-otters upon Beering's and Copper Iſlands during theſe expeditions, for which monopoly he agreed to deliver to the cuſtoms the third part of the furs.

Oftober 6, 1750, he put to ſea from Bolchereſk, in the ſloop John, manned with twenty-five Ruſſians and Kamtchadals, and two Coffacs; he was ſoon overtaken by a ſtorm, and the veſſel driven on ſhore between the mouths of the rivers Kronotſk and Tſchafminſk.

Oftober, 1751, he again failed, and returned on the 22d of July, 1754, to New Kamtchatkoi Oſtrog, with the fkins of ſeven hundred and fifty-five old fea-otters, thirty-five cub fea-otters, four hundred and ſeventeen cubs of fea-bears, and ſeven thouſand and forty-four arctic fox fkins; of the latter, two thouſand were white, and one thouſand ſeven hundred and ſixty-five black. Theſe furs were procured upon Beering's Iſland and Copper Iſland, where

where Yugof died. Having disobeyed an injunction to take on board some officers of the Russian navy, to accompany him in the expedition, the ship and cargo were seized by order of the chancery of Irkutsk, but as it appeared that certain persons had deposited money in Yugof's hand, for equipping a second vessel, the crown delivered up the cargo, after reserving the third part, according to the original stipulation. This kind of charter-company being soon dissolved through misconduct and want of capital, other merchants were allowed the privilege of fitting out vessels, even before the return of Yugof's ship, and were more fortunate in making discoveries.

Nikiphor Trapeznikof, a merchant of Irkutsk, sent out a ship, called the Boris and Glebb, upon condition of paying, beside the usual tribute, the tenth of all the furs; the Cossack Sila Sheffyrin went on board for the purpose of collecting it. They sailed in August, 1749, from the Kamtchatka river; and returned the 16th of August, 1753, with a large cargo of furs. They visited an unknown island, probably one of the Aleutians, where several of the inhabitants were persuaded to pay a tribute of sea-otter skins; the names of these islanders, were Igya, Oeknu, Ogogoektack, Shabukiauck, Alak, Tutun, Ononushan, Rotogei, Tschinitu, Vatsch, Ashagat, Avyjanishaga, Unashayupu, Lak, Yanshugalik, Umgalikan, Shati, Kyipago, and Oloshkot*; another Aleutian contributed three sea-otters. The cargo consisted of three hundred and twenty prime sea-otter skins, four hundred and eighty of the second, and four hundred of the third sort, five hundred female and middle aged, and two hundred and twenty *medwedki* or young ones.

* The author here remarks in a note, that the proper names of the islanders mentioned in this place, and other parts, bear a surprising resemblance, both in their sound and termination, to those of the Greenlanders.

Andrew

Andrew Tolstykh, a merchant of Selenginsk, having obtained permission from the chancery of Bolcheretsk, refitted a ship which had made a former voyage; he sailed from Kamtchatka August the 19th, 1749, and returned July the 3d, 1752.

According to the commander's account, they lay at anchor from the 6th of September, 1749, to the 20th of May, 1750, off Beering's Island, where they caught only forty-seven sea-otters; proceeded from thence to the Aleutian Islands*, first discovered by Nevodtsikov, and killed one thousand six hundred and sixty-two old and middle-aged sea-otters, and one hundred and nineteen cubs; their cargo consisted besides of the skins of seven hundred and twenty blue foxes, and of eight hundred and forty young sea-bears.

The inhabitants of these islands did not appear to have ever before paid tribute; and seemed to be a-kin to the Tschutski tribe, their women being ornamented with different figures traced in the skin by means of needles, in the manner of that people, and of the Tungusians of Siberia. They differed however from them, by having two small holes cut through the bottom of the under-lip, through each of which they pass a bit of the sea-horse tusk, worked into the form of a tooth, with a small button at one end, to keep it within the mouth. These people killed, without provocation, two Kamtchadals belonging to the ship. Upon the third island some inhabitants had paid tribute: their names were reported to be Anitin, Alukukor, and Alefshkut, with his son Atschelap. The weapons of the whole island consisted of only twelve spears and one dart of bone, all pointed with flint, and the Russians observed two figures carved in wood, resembling sea-lions.

* See chap. 2.

August 3, 1750, the vessel Simeon and John, fitted out by Wsevidof, agent for the Russian merchant R. Rybenskoi, and manned with fourteen Russians (partly merchants, and partly hunters), and thirty Kamtchadals, sailed under the command of the Cossac Vorobief. They were driven by a violent current and tempestuous weather to a small desert island, the position of which is not determined, but it was probably one of those near Beering's Island. The ship being so shattered by the storm, that it was no longer in a condition to keep the sea, Vorobief built a small vessel with drift-wood which he called Jeremiah, and arrived at Kamtchatka in autumn, 1752.

Upon the small island were caught seven hundred old and one hundred and twenty cub sea-otters, one thousand nine hundred blue foxes, five thousand seven hundred black sea-bears, and one thousand three hundred and ten Kotiki, or cub sea-bears.

A voyage made about this time from Anadyrk deserves particular mention.

Aug. 24, 1749, Simeon Novikof of Yakutsk and Ivan Baccof of Ustug, agents for Ivan Shilkin, having determined to proceed from Anadyrk to Kamtchatka by sea, built a vessel one hundred versts above Anadyrk, which employed two years in constructing.

In 1748, they sailed down the river Anadyr, and through the bays of Kopeikina and Onemenskaya, where they passed many sand-banks, entered the exterior gulph, which they reached in nine days, and waited for a favourable wind. Here they saw several Tschutski, who appeared upon the heights singly
and

and not in bodies, as if to reconnoitre, which made them cautious. In passing the large opening of the exterior bay they steered between the beach, on the left, and a contiguous rock; where, at the distance of a hundred and twenty yards the depth of water is from three to four fathoms; sailed E. S. E. about fifty versts, in four fathoms water; doubled a sandy point, which stretches towards the Tschutski coast, and reached the open sea.

From the 10th of July to the 30th, they were driven by tempestuous winds, not far from the mouth of the Anadyr, and ran up the small river Katirka, upon whose banks dwell the Koriacs, a people tributary to Russia. The mouth of the Katirka is from sixty to eighty yards broad, from three to four fathoms deep, and abounds in fish. They again put to sea; and at length reached Beering's Island, where they lay at anchor from the 15th of September to the 30th of October, when a violent storm dashed the vessel to pieces upon the rocks. The crew escaping, searched for the remains of Beering's wreck, to employ the materials in constructing a boat, but found nothing but rotten planks, a few cables, and iron-work corroded with rust. Having selected the best cables, and what iron-work was immediately necessary, and gathered drift-wood during the winter, they built a small boat, whose keel was only seventeen Russian ells and an half long, and named it *Capiton*. In this they put to sea, and sailed in search of an unknown island, which they thought they saw lying North-east: but being mistaken, tacked, and stood for Copper Island, from whence they sailed to Kamtschatka.

The vessel being granted in property to Ivan Shilkin, as some compensation for his losses, with the privilege of employing it in a future expedition to the new-discovered islands, he sailed the 7th of October, 1757, with a crew of

O

twenty

twenty Russians, and the same number of Kamtchadals; accompanied by Studentzof, a Cossac, who was sent to collect the tribute for the crown. An account of this expedition will be given hereafter*.

August, 1754, Nikiphor Trapeznikof fitted out the St. Nicholas, and sailed from Kamtchatka under the command of the Cossac Kodion Durnef. After touching at two of the Aleütian Isles and visiting a third, which had not before been discovered, he returned to Kamtchatka in 1757. His cargo consisted of the skins of one thousand two hundred and twenty sea-otters, of four hundred and ten female, and six hundred and sixty-five cubs; beside which, the crew had obtained in barter from the islanders the skins of six hundred and fifty-two sea-otters, of thirty female, and fifty cubs.

According to an account delivered in the third of May, 1758, by Durnef and Sheffyrin, who was sent as collector of the tribute, they reached in ten days Ataku, one of the Aleütian Islands, where they remained until 1757, and lived upon amicable terms with the natives.

The second island, which is nearest to Ataku, and which contains the greatest number of inhabitants, is called Agataku; and the third Shemya; they lie from forty to fifty versts asunder. Upon all the three islands there are (exclusive of children) but sixty males, whom they rendered tributary. The inhabitants live on wild roots and sea-animals; but do not employ themselves in catching fish, although the rivers abound with all kinds of salmon, and the sea with turbot; their clothes are made of the skins of birds and of sea-otters. The *Toigon*, or chief, of the first island informed them, by means of a boy who

* See chap. 5.

understood the Russian tongue, of three large and well-peopled islands, lying eastward, Ibiya, Kickfa, and Olas, whose inhabitants speak a different language. Sheffyrin and Durnef found upon the island three round copper-plates, containing an inscription, and ornamented with foliage, which the waves had cast upon the shore; and brought them, together with other trifling curiosities, procured from the natives, to New Kamtchatkoi Ostrog.

Another ship built with larchwood by Trapeznikof, which failed in 1752 under the conduct of Alexei Drufinin, a merchant of Kurfk, was cast away at Beering's Island. The crew having constructed a vessel out of the wreck, which they named Abraham, bore away for the more distant islands; but being forced by contrary winds, and meeting with the St. Nicholas upon the point of sailing for the Aleütian Isles, embarked on board that ship, after leaving the new-constructed vessel under the care of four sailors. The crew took upon Beering's Island five sea-otters, one thousand two hundred and twenty-two arctic foxes, and two thousand five hundred sea-bears; their share of the furs, during the expedition in the St. Nicholas, amounted to five hundred sea-otter skins, procured by barter.

CHAP. 4.

Voyages from 1753 to 1756.

Kolodilof's Ship sails from Kamtchatka, 1753—Departure of Serebranikoff's Vessel—Shipwrecked upon one of the distant Islands—Account of the inhabitants—The crew construct another Vessel and return to Kamtchatka—Departure of Kraffilnikoff's Vessel—Shipwrecked upon Copper Island—The Crew reach Beering's Island in two baidars.

THREE vessels were fitted out in 1753: one by Kolodilof, a second by Serebranikof, agent for the merchant Rybenskoy, and a third by Ivan Kraffilnikof, a merchant of Kamtchatka.

Kolodilof's ship sailed from Kamtchatka the 19th of August, with a crew of thirty-four persons, and anchored the 28th off Beering's Island, where they proposed to winter, in order to lay in a stock of provisions; but in attempting to land, the boat overfet, and nine of the crew were drowned.

June 30, 1754, they stood out to sea: the weather however proving stormy and foggy, and the ship springing a-leak, they were in danger of perishing; but unexpectedly reached one of the Aleütian Islands, where they lay from the 15th of September until the 9th of July, 1755. In the autumn of 1754 they were joined by a Kamtchadal, and a Koriac, who, with four others, had deserted from Trapefnikof's crew; and remained upon the island
in

in order to catch sea-otters for their own advantage. Four of these deserters were killed by the islanders for seducing their wives; but these two not being guilty of the same disorderly conduct, the inhabitants lived with them upon the best terms. The crew killed upon this island above one thousand six hundred sea-otters, and returned to Kamtchatka in autumn 1755.

Serebranikof's vessel sailed in July 1753, manned also with thirty-four Russians and Kamtchadals: they discovered several new islands, which were probably some of the more distant ones; but were less fortunate in hunting sea-otters than Kolodilof's crew. They steered S. E. and on the 17th of August anchored under an unknown island, whose inhabitants spoke a language they did not understand. Here they proposed looking out for a safe harbour; but were prevented by a sudden storm, which drove them from their anchor. The ship being tost about for several days towards the east, they discovered not far from the first island, four others; still more to the east three other islands appeared in sight; but they were unable to land. The vessel continued driving until the 2d of September, and was considerably shattered, when they fortunately came near an island and cast anchor; they were however forced from this station, the vessel wrecked upon the coast, and the crew with difficulty reached the shore.

This island seemed to be opposite to Katyrskoi Nofs in the peninsula of Kamtchatka, and near it they saw three others. Towards the end of September, Dmitri Trophin, accompanied with nine men, went in the boat on an hunting and reconnoitring party; they were attacked by a large body of inhabitants, who threw darts from a small wooden engine, and wounded one of the company. The first fire however drove them back; and although they
returned

returned several times to the attack in numerous bodies, yet they were easily repulsed.

These savages mark and colour their faces like the other islanders, and also thrust pieces of bone through holes in their under-lips.

Soon afterwards the Russians were joined in a friendly manner by ten islanders, who brought the flesh of sea-animals and sea-otters: a present the more welcome, as they had lived for some time upon small shell-fish and roots, and had suffered greatly from hunger. Several toys were distributed in return. The Russians remained until June, 1754, upon this island; when they departed in a small vessel, constructed with the remains of the wreck, and called the St. Peter and Paul, in which they landed at Katyrskoi Nofs, where having collected one hundred and forty sea-horse teeth, they reached the mouth of the Kamtchatka river.

During this voyage twelve Kamtchadals deserted; of whom six were slain, together with a female inhabitant, upon one of the most distant islands. The remainder, upon their return to Kamtchatka, were examined; and gave the following account. The island, where the ship was wrecked, is about seventy versts long, and twenty broad; around it lie twelve other islands of different sizes, from five to ten versts distant from each other, and eight of them appear to be no more than five versts long: all these islands contain about one thousand souls. The dwellings of the inhabitants are provided with no other furniture than benches, and mats of platted grass. Their dress consists of a shirt of bird-skins, and an upper garment made of intestines stitched together; they wear wooden caps, ornamented with a small piece
of

of board projecting forwards, apparently, as it seemed, for a defence against arrows. They are all provided with stone-knives, and a few of them possess iron ones: their only weapons are arrows with points of bone or flint, which they shoot from a wooden instrument. There are no trees upon the island: it produces however the cow-parsnip*, which grows at Kamtchatka. The climate is by no means severe, for the snow does not lie upon the ground above a month in the year.

Krafsilnikof's vessel failed in 1754, and anchored on the 18th of October off Beering's Island; where all the ships which make to the new-discovered islands are accustomed to winter, in order to procure a stock of provisions from the sea-cows and other amphibious animals. Here they refitted the vessel which had been damaged by driving upon her anchor; and having laid in a sufficient store of all necessaries, weighed the 1st of August, 1754. The 10th they were in sight of an island, but the coast was lined with so many inhabitants, that they durst not venture a-shore, and stood out to sea. Being overtaken by a storm, they were reduced to great distress for want of water; at length they were driven upon Copper Island, where they landed; and, having taken in wood and water, they again set sail. They were beat back however by contrary winds, and dropped both their anchors near the shore; but the storm increasing at night, both cables were broken, and the ship dashed to pieces. All the crew were fortunately saved; and means were found to get a-shore the ship's tackle, ammunition, guns, and the remains of the wreck; but the provisions were mostly spoiled. Here they were exposed to a variety of misfortunes; three were drowned on the 15th of October, as they were going to hunt, and the others almost perished with hunger, having no nourish-

* Heracleum,

ment but small shell-fish and roots. On the 29th of December great part of the ship's tackle, and all the wood collected from the wreck, was washed away during an high sea. Notwithstanding their distresses, they continued their hunting parties, and caught one hundred and three sea-otters, together with one thousand three hundred and ninety blue foxes.

In spring they put to sea in two baidars, carrying with them all the ammunition, fire-arms, and remaining tackle, and reached Beering's Island, where they found the small vessel Abraham, with the four sailors left a-shore by the crew of Trapeznikof's ship*. But as that vessel was not large enough to contain the whole number, together with their cargo of furs, they staid until Serebranikof's and Tolstyk's vessels arrived, which took in eleven of the crew, with their part of the furs. Twelve remained at Beering's Island, where they killed great numbers of arctic foxes, and all returned to Kamtchatka in the Abraham, excepting two, who joined Shilkin's crew.

* See the preceding chapter.

CHAP. 5.

Voyages from 1756 to 1758—Voyage of Andrean Tolstykh in 1756 to the Aleutian Isles—Voyage of Ivan Shilkin in the Capiton, 1757—Shipwrecked upon one of the Fox Islands—The Crew construct a small Vessel, and are again shipwrecked.

SEPTEMBER 17, 1756, the vessel Andrean and Natalia, fitted out by Andrean Tolstykh, merchant of Selenginsk, and manned with thirty-eight Russians and Kamtchadals, sailed from the mouth of the Kamtchatka river to Beering's Island, where they continued until the 14th of June. As no sea-otters came on shore that winter, they killed nothing but seals, sea-lions, and sea-cows, whose flesh served them for provision, and their skins for covering baidars.

June 13, 1757, they weighed anchor, and in eleven days reached Ataku, one of the Aleutian isles discovered by Nevodtsikof. Here they found the inhabitants, as well of that as of the other two islands assembled, having just taken leave of Trapeznikof's crew, who had sailed for Kamtchatka. The Russians seized this opportunity of persuading them to pay tribute, which they effected by means of the *Toigon*, whose name was Tunulgafen. He recollected one of the crew, a Koriac, who was formerly left upon these islands, and acquainted with the language. A copper kettle, a fur and cloth coat, a pair of breeches, stockings, and boots, were bestowed upon this chief, and on his departure for his own island, he left three women and a boy, to acquire the Russian language.

P

The

The Russians wintered upon this island, and divided themselves, as usual, into different hunting parties: they were compelled by stormy weather to remain there until the 17th of June, 1758, and before their departure, Tunulgafen returned with his family, and paid a year's tribute.

This vessel brought to Kamchatka the most circumstantial account of the Aleutian isles yet received.

The two largest contained at that time about fifty males, with whom the Russians lived in great harmony. They heard of a fourth island at some distance, called by the natives Iviya, which they did not visit on account of tempestuous weather.

The first island is about one hundred versts long, and from five to twenty broad. They estimated the distance from the first to the second, which lies East-by-South, to be about thirty versts, and about forty from the second to the third, which stands South-East. The original dress of the islanders was made with the skins of birds, sea-otters, and seals, which were tanned; but the greater part had procured from the Russians dog-skin coats, and under garments of sheep-skin, of which they were very fond. They are represented as naturally talkative, quick of apprehension, and much attached to the Russians. Their dwellings are hollowed in the ground, and covered with wooden roofs resembling the huts of Kamchatka. Their principal food is the flesh of sea-animals, which they harpoon with bone lances; they also feed upon several species of roots and berries, namely *, cloud-berries, crane-

* Rubus Chamæmorus—Empetrum—Myrtillus—Sorbus.

berries,

berries, bilberries, and services. The rivulets abound with salmon, and other fish of the trout kind, similar to those of Kamtschatka, and the sea with turbot, which are caught with bone hooks.

These islands produce small oaks and underwood, but no large trees; the sea however drives ashore fir and larch, sufficient for the construction of the huts. Arctic foxes and sea-otters frequent the first island in great numbers; and the shores, during stormy weather, are covered with wild geese and ducks.

The Russians, according to the order of the chancery of Bolcheretsk, endeavoured to persuade the *Toigon* of these islands to accompany them to Kamtschatka, but without success. Upon their departure they distributed among the islanders some linen, and thirteen nets for the purpose of catching sea-otters, which were thankfully received. This vessel brought to Kamtschatka the skins of five thousand and thirty old and young sea-otters, of a thousand and forty old and young arctic foxes, and of three hundred and thirty *Medwedki* or cubs of sea-otters.

The small vessel *Capiton*, which was built upon Beering's Island, and which was given to the merchant * Ivan Shilkin, as some compensation for his losses, put to sea September 26, 1757, carrying on board the *Cossac Ignatius Studentsof*, who has given an account of the voyage.

Soon after their departure they were driven back to the shore of Kamtschatka by stress of weather, and the vessel stranded, by which accident they

* See chap. 3.

lost the rudder and one of the crew. This misfortune prevented them from putting to sea again until the following year, when they sailed with thirty-nine of the original crew, several being left behind on account of sickness. At Beering's Island they took up two of Krasnikof's crew *, who had been shipwrecked. They again set sail in August, and touched at the nearest Aleutian Isles, after suffering greatly from storms; they continued their course to the remoter islands lying between East and South-East, and having passed by the first, anchored off the second. A boat being sent towards the shore, the crew were suddenly attacked by a numerous body of islanders, and had scarcely time to save themselves by returning to the vessel. They had no sooner got aboard, than a violent gale of wind broke the cable, drove them to sea, and wrecked the vessel upon a small island at no great distance. The crew reached the shore with difficulty, and saved nothing but the fire-arms and ammunition.

They had scarcely landed before they were beset by a number of savages, rowing in baidars from the western point of the island. Though several of the Russians were disabled by cold and wet, and only fifteen remained capable of defending themselves, they advanced without hesitation to the islanders; and Nicholas Tsiuprof, who had a slight knowledge of their language, in vain endeavoured to sooth them; but the savages gave a sudden shout, and saluted them with a volley of darts. The Russians then fired, killed two of the assailants, and forced the remainder to retire; and although a fresh body appeared in sight, no new attack was made. The savages soon afterwards left the island, and rowed across the strait.

* See chap. 4.

From the 6th of September to the 23d of April, the crew underwent all the extremities of famine; their best fare was shell-fish and roots, and they were even at times reduced to still the cravings of appetite with the leather which the waves washed from the wreck. Seventeen died of hunger; and the rest would soon have shared the fate of their companions, had they not fortunately discovered a dead whale, which the sea had cast a-shore. They remained upon this island another winter, where they killed two hundred and thirty sea-otters; and, having built a small vessel out of the remains of the wreck, put to sea in the beginning of summer 1760. Having reached one of the Aleütian islands, where Serebranikof's vessel lay at anchor, they were again shipwrecked, and lost all the remaining tackle and furs. Only thirteen of the crew now remained, who returned on board the abovementioned vessel to Kamtchatka, July 1761.

CHAP. 6.

Voyages in 1758, 1759, and 1760—to the Fox Islands—in the St. Vladimir, fitted out by Trapeznikof, and commanded by Paikof, 1758—and in the Gabriel, by Betshavin—Account of the inhabitants of Alakfa or Alachkak—Voyage of the Peter and Paul to the Aleütian Islands, 1759.

SEPTEMBER 1758, the merchant Simeon Krafilnikof and Nikiphor Trapeznikof fitted out two vessels for the purpose of catching sea otters. One of these, called the St. Vlodimir, sailed the 28th under the command of Dmetri Paikof, carrying the Cossac Sila Shaffyrin as collector of the tribute, and a crew of forty-five men. In twenty-four hours they reached Beering's Island, where they wintered.

July 16, 1759, they steered South in search of land; but, being disappointed, bore away to the North for the Aleütian Isles; and baffled by contrary winds, sailed towards the distant islands, known at present under the name of Lyffie Ostrova, or the Fox Islands. September 1, they reached the first, called by the natives Atchu, and by the Russians Goreloi, or the Burnt Island; but, as the coast was steep and craggy, they made to Amlak, lying at a small distance, where they determined to pass the winter. They divided themselves into three parties: the first, at the head of which was Alexey Drufinin, went to a small island called in the journal Sitkin; the Cossac Shaffyrin led the second, consisting of ten persons, to Atak; and Simeon Polevoi remained
aboard

aboard with the rest of the crew. All these islands were well peopled; the men wore bones thrust through their ears, under the lips, and the gristle of the nose; and the faces of the women were marked with blackish streaks made with a needle and thread in the skin, in the same manner as a Cossack one of the crew, had observed before upon some of the Tschutski. The inhabitants had no iron; the points of their darts and lances were tipped with bone and flint.

The Russians first imagined that Amlak was uninhabited; but in one of their hunting parties they found a boy of eight years old, whom they brought with them; they gave him the name of Hermolai, and taught him the Russian language, that he might serve as an interpreter. After penetrating further, they discovered a hut, wherein were two women, four men, and as many boys, whom they treated kindly, and employed in hunting, fishing, and digging roots. This kind behaviour encouraged others to pay frequent visits, and exchange fish and flesh for goats hair, horses' manes, and glass beads. They procured also four other islanders with their wives, who dug roots for them; and thus the winter passed without any disturbance.

In spring the hunting parties returned; during these excursions only one man was killed upon the island Atak, and his fire-arms taken away by the natives. June 1760, the same parties were sent to the same islands. Shaffyrin, who headed one of the parties, was soon afterwards killed, together with eleven men, by the inhabitants of Atak, but for what reason is not known. Drusinin received the first information of this massacre from some inhabitants of Sitkin, where he then was, and immediately set out with the remaining hunters to join their companions on board. Although he succeeded in regaining the vessel,

vessel, their number was so considerably reduced that their situation appeared very dangerous: he was soon however relieved from his apprehensions by the arrival of the merchant Betshevin's vessel at the island of Atchu*. The two crews entered into partnership: the St. Vlodimir received twenty-two men, and transferred eleven to the other vessel; the former wintered at Amlak, and the latter continued at anchor before Atchu.

This vessel, fitted out at the expence of Betshevin, a merchant of Irkutsk, was called Gabriel, and put to sea from the mouth of the Bolshaia Reka, July 31, 1760. She was manned with forty Russians and twenty Kamtschadals, and had on board Gabriel Pushkaref of the garrison of Ochotsk, Andrew Shdanof, Jacob Sharypof, Prokopei Lobashkof, with Nikiphors Golodof, and Aphanassei Oskolof, Betshevin's agents.

Having passed the second strait of the Kuril Isles, they reached the Aleutian Isles on the 24th of August, and sailed among those more remote islands which lie in one continued chain to the extent of 15 degrees of longitude.

September 25, they reached Atchu, or Burnt Island, and found the St. Vlodimir lying twenty versts from that island, before Amlak, in danger of being attacked by the islanders. They immediately joined crews, in order to enable the enfeebled company of the St. Vlodimir to continue hunting; and, as it is usual in such cases, entered into a contract for the division of the profit. During the winter the two crews killed, partly upon Siguyam, about eight

* Atak and Atchu are two names for the same island; called also by the Russians Goreloi or Burnt Island.

hundred sea-otters of different sizes, about one hundred *medwedki* or cubs, some river otters, above four hundred red, greyish, and black foxes, and collected twelve pood of sea-horse teeth.

In June 1761, the crews were distributed equally on board the two vessels: Kraffilnikof's remained at Amak, with an intention of returning to Kamtchatka, and Betshevin's put to sea from Atchu, in quest of other islands. They touched first at Umnak, where they met Nikiphorof's vessel, took in wood and water, and repaired their sails; they steered for the most remote island, Alakfu, or Alakshak, where, having laid up the ship in a bay, they built huts, and made preparations for wintering. This island was well inhabited, and the natives behaved at first in a very friendly manner, for they trafficked with the Russians, and even delivered nine of their children as hostages; but the lawless and irregular behaviour of the crew soon irritated and provoked the islanders to hostilities.

In January 1762, Golodof and Pufhkaref went with a party of twenty men along the shore; and, in attempting to violate some girls on the island Unyumga, were surprised by a numerous body of natives: Golodof and another Russian were killed and three wounded. Not long afterwards, the watch of the crew was suddenly attacked by the islanders; four were slain, as many wounded, and the huts reduced to ashes.

May 3, Lobaschkof and another Russian were killed, as they were going to bathe in the warm springs, which lie about five versts from the haven; on which seven of the hostages were put to death. The same month the natives attempted to surprise the Russians, but being discovered, were repulsed by

means of the fire-arms. At length the Russians, finding themselves in continual danger, weighed anchor, and sailed for Umnak, where they took on board two inhabitants with their wives and children in order to shew them other islands; but were prevented by tempestuous weather from reaching them, and were driven westward, with such violence, that all their sails were carried away. At length, on the 23d of September, they ran a-ground in the district of Stobolskoi Ostrog. Six men were immediately dispatched in the small boat and two baidars to land, and were accompanied with several girls who had been brought from the new-discovered islands in order to gather berries. Meanwhile the crew endeavoured to ply to windward, and the party in the boat were scarcely able, on account of a storm, to reach the ship, and catch hold of a rope, which was flung out to them. Two men remained with the baidars; and were afterwards carried by some Kamtschadals to New Kamtschatkoi Ostrog. The ship, without one sail remaining was driven along the coast of Kamtschatka towards Avatcha, and about seventy versts from that harbour ran into the bay of Kalatzoff on the 25th of September. The cargo consisted of the skins of nine hundred old and young sea-otters, and of three hundred and fifty foxes.

Pushkaref and his crew during this voyage treated the islanders with great inhumanity; they were brought to trial in 1764; and the preceding account is drawn from the concurring evidence of several witnesses. It appears also, that they brought away from Atchu and Amleg two Aleutian men and three boys, Ivan an Aleutian interpreter, and about twenty women and girls whom they seduced. Ivan, and one of the boys whom they called Moses, were the only persons who arrived at Kamtschatka. On their first approach to that coast, fourteen women were sent ashore to dig roots and gather berries; of these two

ran

ran away, and a third being killed, as they were returning to the ship, by Gorelin, the rest in a fit of despair leaped into the sea and were drowned. All the remaining Aleutians, excepting Ivan and Mofes, were immediately thrown overboard by Puskaref's order. The account which follows, although it is found in the depositions, does not deserve to be entirely credited.

The natives are very tall and strong. They make their clothes of the skins of birds; and wear bones in their under lips by way of ornament. They were said to strike their noses until they bled, in order to suck the blood; but we are informed from subsequent accounts, that the blood was intended for other purposes*. They were accused even of murdering their own children, in order to drink their blood; but this is undoubtedly an invention of the criminals, who represented the islanders in the most hideous colours, as an excuse for their own cruelties. Their subterraneous dwellings are similar to those of the Kamtchadals; and have several openings on the sides, through which they make their escape when the principal entrance is beset by an enemy. Their weapons consist of arrows and lances pointed with bones which they dart to a considerable distance.

The island Alakfu is said to contain rein-deer, bears, wild boars, wolves, otters, and a species of dogs with long ears, which are very fierce and wild. The greater part of these animals not being found upon those Fox Islands which lie nearer to the west, this circumstance seems to prove that

* It appears, in the last chapter of this translation, that the islanders are accustomed to glue on the points of their darts with blood; and that this was the real motive for the practice mentioned in the text.

Alakfu * is situated at no great distance from the continent of America. Red and black foxes are so numerous that they are seen in herds of ten or twenty. Wood is driven upon the coast in great abundance. The island produces no large trees, but under-wood, and a great variety of bulbs, roots, and berries. The coasts are frequented by large flocks of sea-birds, the same which are observed upon the shore of the sea of Penshink.

August 4, 1759, the Peter and Paul, fitted out at the expence of the merchant Rybenfkoi, by his agent Andrew Serebranikof, and manned with thirty-three persons, set sail from the mouth of the Kamtchatka river. They steered southwards until the 20th of September, without seeing land, when they stood for the Aleütian Isles, one of which they reached on the 27th. They remained there until the 24th of June, 1761; during which time they killed one thousand nine hundred sea-otters, and obtained four hundred and fifty by barter with the islanders. The Coffac Minyachin, who was on board as collector of the tribute, in his account calls the first island by the Russian name of Krugloi, or Round Island, which he supposes to be about sixty versts in circumference: the largest island lies thirty versts from thence, and is about an hundred and fifty round; the smallest is about thirty versts from the latter, and is forty in circumference. These three islands contain several high rocky mountains. The number of inhabitants was computed to be about forty-two men, besides women and children.

* Alaksa or Alaxa is laid down by Cook in his chart as a promontory of the American continent; but subsequent navigators in conformity with these daily accounts still suppose it to be an island.—Sauer, p. 174.

CHAP. 7.

Voyage of Andrean Tolstykh in the St. Andrean and Natalia, 1760—Discovery of some new Islands called Andreanoffskie Oстрова—Description of six of those Islands—Account of the Inhabitants—The Vessel wrecked upon the Coast of Kamtchatka.

THE most remarkable voyage hitherto made is that of the St. Andrean and Natalia, of which a narrative is extracted from the journals of the two Cossacs, Peter Wafyutinskoi and Maxim Lafarof. This vessel, fitted out by Andrean Tolstykh, left the mouth of the Kamtchatka river September 27, 1760, stood out to sea eastward, and on the 29th reached Beering's Island. There she lay at anchor in a bay, from whence the crew landed all the tackle and lading. Soon afterwards they were driven a-shore by a violent autumnal storm, without any other damage than the loss of an anchor. Here they passed the winter; and after refitting, put to sea June 24, 1761; passed Copper Island, and steered S. E. towards the Aleütian isles, which they did not reach till the 6th of August. They cast anchor in an open bay near Attak, in order to procure an interpreter from the Toigon Tunulgafen; but he being dead, they sent presents to the Toigon Bakutun. As three ships were already lying at anchor before this island, on the 19th they again stood out to sea in quest of the more distant islands, for the purpose of exacting a tribute, carrying on board a relation of the Toigon Bakutun, who had a slight knowledge of the Russian language. They steered N. E. and

N. E.

N. E. by E. and were driven, on the 28th, by a gale of wind towards an island, where they immediately cast anchor. The following morning the two *Coffacs*, with a party of eight persons, went a-shore, but saw no inhabitants. August 30, the vessel was brought into a safe bay, and the next day some of the crew were sent a-shore to procure wood for refitting, but no large trees were found upon the whole island. Lafarof, one of the party, who had been there before in Serebranikof's vessel, called the island Ayagh or Kayaku and another, which lay about the distance of twenty versts, Kanaga. In returning to the ship, they saw two islanders rowing in baidars towards Kanaga, one of whom had served as an interpreter, and was known to Lafarof; he presented them with some fresh provision, which they gratefully accepted, and continued their course across the strait to Kanaga. Soon afterwards Lafarof and eight men rowed over to that island, and invited the Toigon, who was a relation of the interpreter, to pay them a visit at Kayaku.

Near the place where the vessel lay at anchor, a rivulet falls into the bay; it flows from a lake two or three versts in circumference, and formed from a number of small springs. The course of the rivulet is eight versts, and in summer several species of salmon and other fish, similar to those found at Kamchatka, ascend the stream as far as the lake.

Lafarof was employed in fishing in this rivulet, when the Toigon of Kanaga, accompanied with a considerable number of the natives in fifteen baidars, arrived at the ship: they were hospitably entertained, and received several presents. The Russians embraced this opportunity of persuading the islanders to acknowledge themselves subject to the Empress, and to pay a regular tribute.

As

As soon as the vessel was laid up in a secure place, Tolstyky, Vasslyutin, and Lafarof, with several others, went in four baidars to Kanaga. Tolstyky remained upon that island; but Vasslyutin and Lafarof rowed in two baidars to Tsfetchina, which is separated from Kanaga by a strait about seven versts in breadth; the islanders received them amicably, and promised to pay tribute. The several parties returned all safe to Kayaku, but without having procured any furs. Soon afterwards Tolstyky dispatched some hunters in four baidars to Tagalak, Atchu, and Amlak, which lay to the east of Kayaku; as none of these parties met with any opposition from the natives, they remained in great tranquillity upon these several islands until 1764. Their success in hunting was not great, for they caught no more than one thousand eight hundred and eighty full grown sea-otters, seven hundred and seventy-eight middle-aged, and three hundred and seventy two cubs.

Lafarof thus describes the six islands*, which lie in a chain somewhat to the north-west of the Fox Islands, and must not be confounded with them. The first certain account was brought by this vessel, the St. Andrean and Natalia, from whence they are called the Andreanofskie Ostrova, or the Islands of St. Andrean.

Ayagh is a hundred and fifty versts in circumference, contains several high and rocky mountains, the intervals of which are bare heath and moor ground. Not one forest tree is to be found upon the whole island. The vegetables seem for the most part like those of Kamtchatka, also crow† or

* These are the six islands described by Mr. Stæhlin in his description of the New Archipelago.

† Empetrum, Vaccin. Uliginosum, Sanguisorba, & Bistorta.

crakeberries and the larger sort of bilberries, but in small quantities, and an abundance of the roots of burnet and all kinds of snake weed, sufficient in case of necessity, to furnish a plentiful provision for the inhabitants. The rivulet already described is the only one in the island. The number of inhabitants cannot be ascertained, because the natives pass continually from island to island in their baidars.

Kanaga lies west from Ayagh, is two hundred versts in circumference, and contains a high volcano, where the natives find sulphur in summer; at the foot of this mountain are hot springs, in which they occasionally boil their provision. On this island there is no rivulet, and the low grounds are similar to those of Ayagh. The inhabitants amount to two hundred.

Tfetchina lies eastward forty versts from Kanaga, and is eighty in circumference. It is full of rocky mountains, of which the most lofty is the *Bielaia Sopka*, or White Peak. In the valley there are also some warm springs, but no rivulet abounding in fish; the island contains only four families.

Tagalak is forty versts in circumference, ten east from Tfetchina; it contains a few rocks, but neither rivulets with fish, nor any vegetable production fit for sustenance. The coasts are rocky and dangerous; this island is also inhabited by no more than four families.

Atchu lies in the same position forty versts distant from Tagalak, is three hundred in circumference, and provided with a harbour, where ships may ride securely at anchor. It contains many rocky mountains, and several small rivulets that fall into the sea, one of which running eastwards abounds in fish.

The

The roots just mentioned, and bulbs of white lilies are found in plenty. The inhabitants amount to about sixty.

Amlak is a mountainous island more than seven versts eastward from Atchu, and is also three hundred in circumference. It contains the same number of inhabitants as Atchu, has a commodious haven, and produces roots in abundance. Of several small rivulets, one only, which flows towards the north, contains any fish. Besides these, a cluster of other islands was observed stretching farther to the east.

The inhabitants of these six islands are tributary to Russia; they dwell in subterraneous cabins, in which they make no fires but in winter; when the weather is cold, they burn a heap of dry grass, over which they stand and catch the heat. Their clothes are made like shirts, of the skins of the *guillimot and puffin, which they catch with springes. Over these in rainy weather they wear an upper garment, made of the bladders and other dried intestines of seals and sea-lions oiled and stitched together. The clothes of the women and children are made of sea-otter skins in the same form as those of the men. They catch cod and turbot with bone-hooks, and eat them raw. As they never collect a store of provision, they suffer greatly from hunger in stormy weather, when they cannot venture out to fish, at which time they are reduced to live upon small shell-fish and sea-wrack, which they gather upon the beach. In May and June when the weather is calm they row out in their baidars, and harpoon sea-otters and sea-dogs.

Whenever they pass the night at a distance from home, they dig a hole in the earth, and lay themselves down, covered only with their clothes and mats

* *Colymbus Troile, Alca Arctica.*

of platted grafs. Regardless of every thing but the present moment, destitute of religion, and without the least appearance of decency, they seem but few degrees removed from brutes.

As soon as the hunting parties were returned, and the vessel prepared for departure, the Toigons of these islands (excepting Kanaga) came in baidars to Tolsty, accompanied with a considerable number of natives; their names were Tsfarkulini, Tfhunila, Kayugotfk and Mayatok. They brought a voluntary tribute, with presents of dried salmon, and unanimously expressed satisfaction at the good conduct of the Russians. Tolsty gave them in return toys and other trifles, and desired them to recommend to the inhabitants of the other islands the like friendly behaviour towards the Russian merchants who should visit them.

June 14, 1764, they sailed for Kamtchatka, and anchored on the 19th before Shemiya, one of the Aleütian Islands. The 21st they were forced from their anchor by tempestuous winds, and driven upon a rocky coast. This accident obliged them to send their lading a-shore, and to draw the ship on land in order to repair the damage, which was effected with much difficulty. On the 18th of August they stood out to sea, and reached Atchu, on the 20th. Having sprung a leak, they again refitted the vessel; and, after taking on board the crew of a ship lately cast away, sailed for Kamtchatka. On the 4th of September they came in sight of that peninsula near Tzafchinskoi Ostrog, and on the 18th, as they endeavoured to enter the mouth of the Kamtchatka river, were forced by a storm upon the shore; the vessel was destroyed, and great part of the cargo lost.

CHAP. 8.

Voyage of the Zacharias and Elizabeth, fitted out by Kulkoff, and commanded by Drufinin, 1762—They sail to Umnak and to Unalashka, where they winter—Vessel destroyed; and all the Crew murdered by the Islanders, except four—Their Adventures and wonderful Escape.

I SHALL here barely mention that a vessel was fitted out in August, 1760, at the expence of Terrenti Tfebaëffkoi; but I shall have occasion to be very circumstantial in my accounts concerning several others, which failed during the following years, as more copious information concerning the Fox Islands was procured from these voyages, although for the most part unfortunate, than from all the preceding ones.

In 1762 four vessels sailed for the Fox Islands; of which only one returned to Kamtchatka.

The first was the Zacharias and Elizabeth, fitted out by Kulkof, a merchant of Vologda, and Company, under the command of Drufinin, and manned with thirty-four Russians, and three Kamtchadals.

September 6, they departed from Okotsk, and arrived October the 11th in the haven of St. Peter and Paul, where they wintered. June 24, 1763, they again put to sea, and having reached, in eleven days, the nearest Aleütian

R 2

Islands,

Islands, anchored before Attak. They remained here about fourteen days, and took on board seven Russians who had been shipwrecked on this coast. Among these was Korelin, who returned to Kamtchatka, and gave this account of the voyage.

July the 17th, they sailed from Attak towards the more distant isles, landed upon an island, where the crew of the Andrian and Natalia was engaged in hunting, and, having laid in a supply of water, continued their voyage.

In the beginning of September they arrived at Umnak, one of the Fox Islands; cast anchor about a verst from the shore, and found Glottof's vessel, whose voyage will be mentioned in a succeeding chapter*. Druinin immediately dispatched his first mate Maefnisk, and Korelin, with thirty-four of the crew on shore. They passed over to the eastern extremity of the island, which was distant about seventy versts from the vessel, and returned on the 12th of September. During this expedition, they saw several remains of fox-traps set by the Russians, and met with some natives who shewed tribute-quittances. The same day letters were brought by the islanders from Medvedef and Korovin†, who were just arrived at Umnak and Unalashka in two vessels fitted out by the merchants Protaffof and Trapefnikof, and answers were returned by the same messengers.

On the 22d, Druinin sailed to the northern point of Unalashka, which lies about fifteen versts from Umnak; the crew having laid up the vessel

* Chap. 10.

† See the following chapter.

in a safe harbour, and brought the lading a-shore, made preparation to construct a hut. Soon after their arrival, two Toigons of the nearest village voluntarily brought hostages, and their example was immediately followed by several of the more distant villages. Having received information of an hunting party sent from Trapeznikof's ship, Macnisk dispatched three companies on the same errand, one consisting of eleven men, among whom was Korelin, under the command of Peter Tsekalef; a second of the same number, under Michael Kudyakof; and a third of nine men, under Yephim Kafkitfyn. Tsekalef's was the only one of which we have received any circumstantial account; for not a single person of the other two, or of the crew remaining on board, ever returned to Kamchatka.

Kafkitfyn remained near the haven, and two other companies were dispatched to the northern point of the island. Kudyakof stopped at a place called Kalaktak, which contained about forty inhabitants. Tsekalef went to Inalok, which lies about thirty versts from Kalaktak. Having found a dwelling with about seventy inhabitants, to whom he behaved with kindness, he built a hut, and kept a constant watch.

December 4, six of the party being dispatched to look after the pit-falls, there remained only five Russians, Peter Tsekalef, Stephen Korelin, Dmitri Bragin, Gregory Shaffyrin, and Ivan Kokovin, the islanders therefore seized this opportunity of giving the first proof of their hostile intentions. As Tsekalef and Shaffyrin were upon a visit to the islanders, they suddenly, and without any provocation, struck Tsekalef upon the head with a club, and stabbed him with knives. They next fell upon Shaffyrin, who defended himself with a hatchet; and though desperately wounded, forced his way back to his companions.

panions. Bragin and Korelin, who remained in the hut, had immediate recourse to their fire-arms; but Kokovin, who was at a small distance, was surrounded by the savages, thrown down, and stabbed with knives and darts, until Korelin came to his assistance; who having wounded two, and driven away the others, brought his companion half-dead to the hut.

Soon afterwards the natives surrounded the hut, which the Russians had taken the precaution to provide with loop holes. The siege lasted four days without intermission. The islanders were prevented indeed by the fire-arms from storming the hut; but whenever the Russians made their appearance, darts were immediately shot at them from all sides; so that they could not venture out for water. At length, when Shaffyrin and Kokovin were a little recovered, they all sallied out upon the islanders with their guns and lances; killed three, wounded several, and dispersed the rest. During the siege the savages were observed at a little distance holding up in triumph some arms and caps, which belonged to the six Russians who were sent to the pit-falls, and had been massacred by the natives.

The natives at length disappearing, the Russians dragged the baidar into the sea, rowed without molestation out of the bay, which is about ten versts broad, landed near a small habitation, and finding it empty, drew the baidar a-shore, and traversed, with their fire-arms and lances, the mountains towards Kalaktak, where they had left Kudyakof's party. As they approached that place towards evening, they fired from the heights; but no signal being returned, they concluded as was really the case, that this company had also been massacred by the inhabitants. They themselves narrowly escaped the same fate; for, on the report of the fire-arms, numerous bodies of the islanders

islanders made their appearance, and closely pursued them; the night however favoured their escape over the sandy shore of a bay to a rock, where they were sheltered, and with their fire-arms, obliged the islanders to retire. As soon as their assailants were withdrawn, the Russians proceeded towards the haven, where they had left their vessel at anchor. They ran without interruption during the whole night; and at break of day, when they were about three versts from the haven, espied a locker of the vessel lying on the shore. Struck with this alarming discovery, they precipitately retreated to the mountains; from whence they descried several islanders rowing in baidars, but saw no appearance of their own vessel. During that day they concealed themselves and did not venture again towards the haven till the evening. Upon their arrival they found the vessel broken to pieces, and the mangled bodies of their companions scattered on the beach. Having collected all the provision which had been untouched by the savages, they returned to the mountains.

The following day they scooped out a cavity at the foot of a mountain about three versts from the haven, and covered it with a piece of a sail. In the evening they again repaired to the haven, where they found an image of a saint and a prayer-book; but all the tackle and lading were taken away, excepting the leather sacks for provision, which the natives had ripped up, and left as useless. The Russians collected all that remained; and dragged as much as they were able to their retreat in the mountains, where they lived in a very wretched state from the 9th of December to the 2d of February, 1764.

Meanwhile they employed themselves in making a little baidar, which
they

they covered with the leather of the sacks. At night they drew it from the mountains to the sea, and rowed along the northern shore of Unalashka, in hopes of reaching Trapeznikof's vessel, which they supposed lay at anchor upon the coast. They kept at some distance from the shore, and by that means passed three habitations unperceived. The following day they observed five islanders in a baidar, who seeing them, retired to Makushinsk, before which place they were obliged to pass. Darkness coming on, the Russians landed on a rock, and passed the night a-shore. Early in the morning, discovering the islanders advancing towards them from the bay of Makushinsk, they placed themselves in an advantageous post and prepared for defence.

The savages rowed close to the beach; part landing, and part remaining in their baidars, they commenced the assault by a volley of darts, and notwithstanding the Russians did great execution with their fire-arms, the skirmish continued the whole day. Towards evening the enemy retired, and the fugitives betook themselves with their baidar to an adjoining cavern. The attack was again renewed during the night; but the Russians repulsed the assailants without much difficulty. In this encounter Bragin was slightly wounded. They remained in this place three days; but the rise of the spring-tide forced them to fall out towards a neighbouring cavern, which they reached without loss, notwithstanding the opposition of the islanders.

They were confined in this cave five weeks, and kept watch by turns. During that time they seldom ventured twenty yards from the entrance; and were obliged to quench their thirst with snow-water, and with the moisture dripping from the rock. They also suffered greatly from hunger, having no sustenance but small shell-fish, which they occasionally collected

on

on the beach. Compelled at length by extreme want, they one night ventured to draw their baidar into the sea, and fortunately escaped without being perceived.

They continued their progress at night, but in the day, hid themselves on the shore, by which means they reached Trapeznikof's vessel the 30th of March, 1764. What happened to them afterwards in company with the crew of this vessel will be mentioned in the succeeding chapter. Shaffyrin died during the voyage; but Korelin, Kokovin, and Bragin*, returned safe to Kamtchatka. The names of these brave men deserve to be recorded for the courage and perseverance with which they supported and overcame such imminent dangers.

* These Russians were well known to several persons of credit, who have confirmed the authenticity of this relation. Among the rest, the celebrated naturalist Pallas saw Bragin at Irkutsk: from him he had a narrative of their adventures and escape; which, as he assured me, perfectly tallied with the above account, drawn from the journal of Korelin.

CHAP. 9.

Voyage of the Vessel called the Trinity, under the command of Korovin, 1762—Winters at Unalashka—Puts to Sea in the Spring—Stranded in a Bay of the Island Umnack, and the Crew attacked by the Natives—Many of them killed—Others carried off by Sickness—Are reduced to great Straights—Relieved by Glottof, twelve of the whole Company only remaining—Description of Umnack and Unalashka—and Account of the Inhabitants.

THE second vessel which sailed from Kamtchatka in the year 1762, was the Trinity, fitted out by the trading company of Nikiphor Trapeznikof, merchant of Irkutsk, under the command of Ivan Korovin, and manned with thirty-eight Russians and six Kamtchadals.

September 15, they sailed down the Kamtchatka river, stood out to sea the 29th, were driven at large for ten days by contrary winds, on the 8th of October cast anchor on the south side of Beering's Island, laid up the vessel in a secure harbour, and brought the lading ashore. They staid here until the first of August, 1763, and killed about five hundred arctic foxes, and only twenty sea-otters, which resorted less frequently to this island, in consequence of being disturbed by the Russian hunters.

Korovin, having collected a sufficient store of provisions, several skins of sea-cows for the coverings of baidars, and some iron which remained from
the

the wreck of Beering's ship, prepared to depart. Upon his arrival at Beering's Island the preceding autumn, he found there a vessel fitted out by Jacob Protassof, merchant of Tiumen, under the command of Dennis Medvedef*, with whom Korovin entered into a formal contract for the division of the furs. He took on board ten of Medvedef's crew, and gave him seven in return.

August 1, Korovin put to sea from Beering's Island with thirty-seven men, and Medvedef with forty-nine. They sailed without coming in sight of the Aleutian Isles; and on the 15th, Korovin made Unalashka, where Glottof lay at anchor, and Medvedef reached Umnak. Korovin received the news of his safe arrival by some islanders, and afterwards by letters, as both vessels lay at no greater distance from each other than a hundred and fifty versts.

Korovin anchored in a convenient bay at the distance of sixty yards from the shore. On the 16th he landed with fourteen men; but finding only an empty shed, returned to the vessel. After having taken a reinforcement, he again went a-shore in search of inhabitants. About seven versts from the haven, he came to two habitations, and saw three hundred persons; among them three Toigons, recollected and accosted in a friendly manner Barnashef, a native of Tobolsk, who had been there before with Glottof. They shewed some tribute-quittances, which they had lately received from the Cossac Sabin Ponomaref. Two of these Toigons gave each a boy of twelve years of age as an hostage, whom they passed for their children; and

* This is the fourth vessel which sailed in 1762. As the whole crew were massacred by the savages, we have no account of the voyage; mention of this massacre is occasionally made in this and the following chapters.

the third delivered his son of about fifteen years of age, the same who had been Glottof's hostage, and whom Korovin called Alexèy. With these hostages he returned to the ship, which he laid up in the mouth of a river, and brought all the provision and lading a-shore. Soon afterwards the three Toigons came to see the hostages, and informed Korovin, that Medvedef's vessel rode securely at anchor off Umnak.

September 15, every thing being prepared for wintering, Korovin and Barnashef set out in two baidars, each with nine men and one of the hostages, who had a slight knowledge of the Russian language. They went along the northern coast of the island, towards its western extremity, in order to hunt, and to enquire after an interpreter called Kashmak, who had been formerly employed by Glottof. Having rowed about twenty versts, they passed a village, and five versts beyond, landed at another; but as the number of inhabitants amounted to two hundred, they durst not venture to the dwellings. Upon this the Toigon of the place came to them with his wife and son; he shewed a tribute-quittance, and delivered his son, a boy of thirteen years of age, whom Korovin called Stepanka, as a hostage, for which he received a present of corals.

They now rowed to a third village, five versts from the former, where they found the interpreter Kashmak: he accompanied them to the two Toigons, who gave them a friendly reception, and shewed tribute-quittances. A few natives only made their appearance; the rest, as the Toigons pretended, were gone out to fish. The next morning each Toigon gave a boy as a hostage; one of the boys Korovin called Gregory, and the other Alexèy. The Russians were detained two days by a violent storm; during which time a
letter

letter from Medvedef was brought by an Aleutian, and an answer returned by the same person. The storm at length abating, they rowed back to the next village; where they continued two nights without any apprehensions from the savages, and Korovin returned in safety with the hostages.

In the beginning of October they built a hut, partly of wood, and partly of seal-skins, and made preparations for hunting. On the 14th, two companies, each consisting of eleven men, were sent on a hunting party to the eastern point of the island, and returned in four days with hostages. About sixty versts from the haven, they met a party of twenty-five Russians, commanded by Drufinin; at the same time some Toigons brought a present of sturgeon and whales' blubber, and received in return beads and provision.

Korovin and his company now thought themselves secure, and twenty-three men, under the command of Barnashef, were dispatched in two baidars on a hunting party towards the western point of the island. Eight muskets were distributed to each boat, a pistol and a lance to each man, and a sufficient store of ammunition and provision. The following day two accounts were sent from Barnashef, and letters were also received from the crew of Protassoff's vessel. From the 1st of November to the 8th of December, the Russians who remained with Korovin, killed forty-eight dark-coloured foxes, together with a hundred and seventeen of the common sort; during this expedition one man was lost. Some of the natives came occasionally in baidars, and exchanged sea-otter and fox skins for corals. On the 8th of December letters were again brought from Barnashef, also from the crew of Protassoff's ship, and answers were returned by the same messengers.

After

After their departure the mother of Alexèy came with a message from the Toigon her husband, importing that a number of islanders were advancing towards the ship. Korovin accordingly ordered the men to arm, and soon after seventy natives approached, and held up some sea-otter skins. The Russians cried out that no more than ten at a time should come over the brook towards their hut; upon which the islanders left their skins with Korovin, and returned without hostilities. Their apprehensions were now somewhat quieted, but again excited by the arrival of three Kamtchadals belonging to Kulkof's ship, who flew for protection to Korovin; they brought an account that the crew had been killed by the savages, and the vessel destroyed. It was now certain that the seventy islanders had come with hostile intentions. This information spread so sudden a panic among the Russians, that it was even proposed to burn the vessel, and endeavour to find their companions, who were dispersed on hunting parties.

The day however passed without any attack, but towards the evening of the 10th of December, the savages assembled in large bodies, and invested the hut on all sides, and for four days and nights incessantly annoyed the Russians with their darts; two of them were killed, and the survivors nearly exhausted by continual fatigue. On the fifth day the islanders took post in a neighbouring cavern, where they continued watching the Russians so closely during a whole month, that none of them durst venture fifty paces from their dwelling. Korovin, finding himself thus harrassed, ordered the hut to be destroyed, and then retired to his vessel, which was brought for greater security out of the mouth of the rivulet to the distance of a hundred yards from the beach: there they lay at anchor from the 5th of March to the 26th

of

of April, suffering greatly from want of provision, and still more from the scurvy.

During this period they were attacked by a large body of the natives, who advanced with forty baidars, in hopes of surprising the vessel. Korovin was warned of their approach by two of the inhabitants, one of whom was a relation of the interpreter Kashmak, and prepared for their reception. On their approach Korovin fired and killed one person, when they were struck with a panic and rowed away. Incensed at this failure they immediately put to death the two natives, who had betrayed their design to the Russians. Soon after the father of Alexey came and demanded his son, who was restored to him, and on the 30th of March Korelin and his three brave companions arrived as is mentioned in the preceding chapter; by which reinforcement the number of the crew amounted to eighteen persons.

April 26, Korovin put to sea from Unalashka with eleven hostages. The vessel was driven until the 28th by contrary winds, and then stranded in a bay of the island Umnak. The ammunition and sails, together with the skins for the construction of baidars, were brought ashore with great difficulty. During the disembarkation one sick man was drowned; another died as soon as he reached the land, and eight hostages ran away amidst the general confusion. The faithful interpreter Kashmak and three hostages however remained. The whole number of the Russians amounted only to sixteen, and of these three were afflicted with the scurvy. Under these circumstances they secured themselves between their baidar and some empty barrels, which they covered with seal skins, while the sails were spread over them in form
of

of a tent. Two Russians kept watch; and there being no appearance of islanders, the others retired to sleep.

Before break of day, about an hundred savages advancing secretly from the shore threw their darts at the distance of twenty yards with such force, that many pierced the baidar and skins; others passed through the sails. By this discharge, the two persons who kept watch, together with the three hostages, were killed on the spot, and all the Russians wounded. They were indeed so effectually surprised, as to be prevented from having recourse to their fire-arms. In this distress Korovin sallied forth with four Russians and attacked the enemy with lances; two of the savages were killed, and the others driven to flight; but Korovin and his party were so severely wounded, that they had scarcely strength sufficient to return to their tent.

During the night the storm increased and dashed the vessel to pieces, and the greater part of the wreck which was cast on shore, was carried away by the islanders. After breaking the barrels of fat, emptying the sacks of provision, and destroying most of the furs, they went away, and did not again make their appearance until the 30th of April. When they retired, the Russians collected the wretched remains which had been left untouched by the savages, or which the waves had cast a-shore since their departure.

April 30, a body of one hundred and fifty natives advanced from the eastern part of the island towards the tent; and at the distance of a hundred yards, shot at the Russians with fire-arms, but luckily without effect. They also set on fire the high grass, and the wind blew the flames towards the tent; but

but the Russians having forced the enemy to retreat, gained time to extinguish the flames.

This was the last attack, although sickness and misery detained Korovin and his companions on this spot until the 21st of July. They then put to sea in a baidar eight yards long, which they had constructed in order to make to Protassof's vessel, with whose fate they were as yet unacquainted. Their number was now reduced to twelve, among whom were six Kamtchadals.

After rowing ten days, they landed on the beach of the same island Umnak; and there observed the burnt remains of a vessel, and fragments of clothes, sails, and ropes. At a small distance was an empty Russian dwelling, and near it a bath-room, in which they found, to their inexpressible terror, twenty dead bodies in their clothes. Each of them had a thong of leather, or his own girdle fastened about his neck, with which he had been strangled. Korovin and his companions recognised them as part of Protassof's crew; and distinguished among the rest the commander Medvedef. They discovered no traces of the remainder; and, as none ever appeared, we have no account of the circumstances attending this catastrophe.

Having buried their countrymen, Korovin and his companions began to build a hut; but were prevented from finishing it, by the unexpected arrival of Stephen Glottof*, who came to them with a small party by land. Korovin and his companions joined Glottof, and rowed the next day to his vessel.

Soon afterwards Korovin was sent with a party of twenty to coast the

* See the following chapter.

island of Umnak, in order to discover if any part of Medvedef's crew had made their escape; but his enquiries were without success. In the course of this expedition, as he lay at anchor, in September, before a small island situated between Umnak and Unalashka, some savages rowed towards the Russians in two large baidars; and shot at them with fire-arms, though without effect. The same evening Korovin entered a bay with an intention of passing the night on shore; but, as he approached the coast, a number of savages in a hundred baidars surrounded and saluted him with a volley of darts. Korovin fired, and having dispersed them, made to a large baidar, which he saw at some distance, in hopes of finding Russians. He was however mistaken; the islanders who were aboard landed at his approach; and, after shooting at him with fire-arms, retired to the mountains.

Korovin there found the same baidar in which Barnashev had sailed, on a hunting party; within were only two hatchets and some iron points for darts. Three women were seized at the same time; and two natives, who refused to surrender themselves, were put to death. They then went to the dwelling from which all the inhabitants had fled, and found therein pieces of leather, blades of small knives, shirts, and other things, which had belonged to the Russians. All the information which they could procure from the women was, that the crew had been killed, and this booty taken away by the inhabitants, who had retired to Unalashka. Korovin gave these women their liberty; and, being apprehensive of fresh attacks, returned to the haven.

Towards winter Korovin, with a party of twenty-two men, and Ivan Glottof an Aleutian interpreter, was sent on a hunting expedition to the western point of Unalashka. Being informed by some islanders, that a
Russian

Russian ship, under the command of Ivan Soloviof *, was then lying before Unalashka, he rowed towards the haven where she was at anchor. On the way he had a sharp encounter with the natives, who endeavoured to prevent his landing: of these, ten were killed; and the rest fled, leaving behind some women and children. Korovin staid three days aboard Soloviof's vessel, and then returned to the place where he had been attacked. The inhabitants however, made no opposition to his landing; but on the contrary, received him with kindness, and permitted him to hunt: they delivered hostages, entered into a friendly traffic, exchanging furs for beads, and even restored several muskets and other things, taken from the Russians who had been massacred.

A short time before his departure, the inhabitants again shewed hostile intentions; for three of them suddenly attacked the Russian centinel, with knives, but the centinel disengaging himself, and retreating into the hut, they ran away. The Toigons of the village affected ignorance of this treachery; and the offenders were soon afterwards discovered and punished. Korovin, as he was returning to Glottof, was forced to engage with the islanders on Unalashka, and also on Umnak, where they endeavoured to prevent him from landing. Before the end of the year a storm drove the baidar on the beach of Umnak, and the tempestuous weather setting in, they were detained until the 6th of April, 1765, and were reduced to live chiefly upon sea-wrack, and small shell-fish. On the 22d they returned to Glottof, with an inconsiderable cargo of furs. Three days after his arrival, Korovin quitted Glottof, and went with five other Russians to Soloviof, with whom he returned

* Chapter 11.

the following year to Kamtchatka. The six Kamtchadals of Korovin's party joined Glottof.

According to Korovin's account, the islands Umnak and Unalashka are situated not much more north than the mouth of the Kamtchatka river; and, according to the ship's reckoning, about the distance of one thousand seven hundred versts eastwards from the same place. The circumference of Umnak is about two hundred and fifty versts; Unalashka is much larger. Both islands are wholly destitute of trees; but drift-wood is brought a-shore in large quantities. There are five lakes on the northern coast of Unalashka, and one only upon Umnak, of which none exceeded ten versts in circumference. From these lakes issue several small rivulets, which flow only a few versts before they fall into the sea. The fish enter the rivulets in the middle of April; ascend the lakes in July, and continue there till August. Sea-otters and other sea-animals resort but seldom to these islands; but there are abundance of red and black foxes. North-eastward from Unalashka two islands appeared in sight, at the distance of five or ten versts; but Korovin did not touch at them.

The inhabitants row in small baidars from one island to the other, and from this unfeuled manner of life their numbers cannot be ascertained. Their dwellings are made in the following manner: having dug a hole in the earth proportioned to the size of their intended habitation, of twenty, thirty, or forty yards in length, and from six to ten broad, they set up poles of larch, firs, and ash, and lay planks across, which they cover with grass and earth. They enter through apertures in the top by means of ladders. Fifty, a hundred, and even a hundred and fifty persons dwell together in a cave. As they

they seldom make fires within, these dwellings are much cleaner than those of the Kamtchadals; but in winter they warm themselves by kindling dry herbs. Several of these islanders wear fur-stockings in winter; but the greater part go bare-footed, and all without breeches. The skins of cormorants, puffins, and sea-divers, serve for the mens' cloathing; and the women wear the skins of sea-bears, seals, and sea-otters. They sleep on thick mats, which they twist of a soft kind of grass growing on the shore, and have no other covering than their usual clothes. Many of the men have five or six wives; and the best hunter or fisher has the greatest number. The women make their needles of the bones of birds' wings, and use sinews for thread. Their weapons are bows and arrows, lances, and darts, which, like the Greenlanders, they throw to the distance of sixty yards by means of a little hand board. Both darts and arrows are feathered; the arrows are an ell and a half long; the shaft, which is well made considering the want of instruments, is often composed of two pieces joined together, and the point is formed of flint, sharpened by beating it between two stones. The darts as well as the lances were formerly tipped with bone; but the points are now commonly made of iron procured from the Russians, and from which they ingeniously form little hatchets and two-edged knives. They shape the iron by rubbing it between two stones, and wetting it frequently with sea-water. With these instruments and stone hatchets they build their baidars. They have a strange custom of cutting holes in the under-lip and through the gristle of the nose; they place in the lip two little bones, wrought in the form of teeth, which project some inches from the face, and in the nose a piece of bone is inserted crossways. The dead are buried with their boat, weapons, and clothes*.

* The author repeats here several circumstances which have been mentioned before, and many of them will occur again: but my office as a translator would not suffer me to omit them.

CHAP. 10.

Voyage of Stephen Glottof in the Andrean and Natalia, 1762—He reaches the Fox Islands—Sails beyond Unalaska to Kadyak—Winters on that Island—Repeated Attempts of the Natives to destroy the Crew—They are repulsed, reconciled, and prevailed on to trade with the Russians—Account of Kadyak.—Its Inhabitants—Animals—Productions—Glottof sails back to Umnak—Winters there—Returns to Kamtchatka—Journal of his Voyage.

THE following voyage, which extended further, and terminated more fortunately than the last expeditions, is one of the most memorable yet made.

Terenty Tsebaeffskoi and company, merchants of Lalsk, fitted out the Andrean and Natalia under the command of Stephen Glottof, an experienced and skilful seaman of Yarensk. This vessel, manned with thirty-eight Russians and eight Kamtchadals, sailed from the bay of the river Kamtchatka the 1st of October, 1762. In eight days they reached Mednoi Ostrof, or Copper Island, and having found a convenient harbour, unloaded and laid up the vessel for the winter. They first supplied themselves with provisions; and afterwards killed a quantity of ice-foxes, and a considerable number of sea-otters.

For the benefit of the crown, and their own use in case of need, they resolved to take on board all the remaining tackle and iron-work of Beering's ship,

ship, which was buried in the beach of Commander's Island. For this purpose they dispatched, on the 27th of May, Jacob Malevinskoy with thirteen men in a baidar to that island, who brought back twenty-two pood of iron, ten of old cordage fit for caulkers' use, some lead and copper, and several thousand beads.

Copper Island has its name from the native copper found on the coast, particularly at the south western point. Of this native copper Malevinskoy brought two large pieces, weighing twelve pounds. Amongst other floating bodies the sea drives on the shores of this island, the true camphor wood, and another sort very white, soft, and sweet-scented, is found.

After making the necessary preparations for continuing the voyage, they sailed from Copper Island the 26th of July, 1763, and steered for Umnak and Agunalahka, where Glottof had formerly observed great numbers of black foxes. On account of storms and contrary winds, they did not reach Umnak till the 24th of August; and without losing time, resolved to sail further for the discovery of new islands. They passed eight, separated only by straits, which, according to their estimation, were from twenty to a hundred versts broad. Glottof did not land till he reached the last and most easterly of these islands, called by the inhabitants Kadyak, which according to the natives was not far distant from the coast of a wide-extended woody continent. No land however was to be seen from a little island denominated by the natives Aktunak, situated thirty versts east of Kadyak.

September 8, the vessel ran up a creek, south east of Aktunak, where a rivulet falls into the sea, which flows from a lake six versts long, one broad, and

and fifty fathoms deep. During the ebb, the vessel was left aground; but the return of the water set her again afloat. Near the shore were four large huts, so crowded with people, that their number could scarcely be counted: but soon after Glottof's arrival, they quitted their dwellings, and retired with precipitation. The next day some islanders in baidars approached the vessel, and accosted the people on board: and as Ivan Glottof, the Aleütian interpreter, did not well understand the language, they soon afterwards returned with a boy whom they had formerly taken prisoner from Ifanak, an island to the west of Kadyak. Him the Aleütian interpreter perfectly understood; and by his means they conversed with the savages, and endeavoured to persuade them to become tributary. They used every argument in their power to prevail on them to deliver the boy for an interpreter, but all entreaties were ineffectual, and the savages rowed back towards the cliff called Aktalin, which lies three versts to the south of Kadyak, where they seemed to have habitations.

On the 6th of September, Kaplin, who was sent with thirteen men to the cliff, found ten huts, which contained a hundred natives. They behaved in a friendly manner, and answered the interpreter by the boy, that they had nobody proper for a hostage, but would deliver the boy. Kaplin received him thankfully, and brought him on board; he afterwards accompanied Glottof to Kamtchatka, and was baptized by the name of Alexander Popof, being then thirteen. For some days after this conference, the islanders came off in companies of five, ten, twenty, and thirty; were admitted on board in small numbers, and kindly received, but with a proper degree of circumspection.

On the 8th of September the vessel was brought further up the creek,
and

and on the 9th Glottof with ten men proceeded to a village, where the natives had begun to reside: it consisted of three summer-huts covered with long grass, from eight to ten yards broad, twelve long, and four high. They saw there about a hundred men, but neither women nor children, and as they could not persuade the savages to give hostages, Glottof resolved to keep a strong guard.

Although the islanders visited them still in small bodies, their hostile intentions became more and more apparent. At last on the 1st of October, by day-break, a great number having assembled in the remote parts of the island, approached without being discovered by the watch; and seeing no one on deck but those on duty, shot suddenly into the vessel with arrows. The watch found refuge behind the quarter boards, and gave the alarm without firing. Glottof immediately ordered a volley to be fired over their heads with small arms; upon which they instantly retreated. At break of day, no enemy was seen; but they discovered several ladders, bundles of hay in which the savages had put sulphur, and a quantity of birch-tree bark, left behind in their precipitate flight.

Glottof now found it necessary to be on his guard against their evil attempts, and his suspicions were further increased by the subsequent conduct of the natives: for though they came to the vessel in small bodies, yet they examined every thing, and particularly the watch, with the strictest attention, and always returned without paying regard to the friendly propositions of the Russians.

On the 4th of October two hundred made their appearance, carrying wooden shields before them, and preparing with bows and arrows for an attack. Clottof endeavoured at first by persuasion to prevail upon them to desist; but observing them to continue advancing, he ventured a sally. The enemy disconcerted by this intrepidity, retreated without resistance.

The 26th of October they made a third attack, and advanced towards the vessel by day-break; the alarm however was given in due time, and the whole crew were under arms. The approach of day-light discovered different parties of the enemy advancing under the protection of wooden screens. Of these moving breast-works they counted seven, covering from thirty to forty men armed with bone lances. Beside these a croud of armed men advanced separately to the attack, some bearing whale jaw-bones, and others wooden shields. Dissuasion proving ineffectual, and the arrows beginning to fall even aboard the ship, Clottof gave orders to fire. As the shot from the small-arms did not pierce the screens, the islanders advanced with steadiness and intrepidity. In this imminent danger Clottof risked a sally of his whole crew, armed with muskets and lances; the islanders instantly threw down their screens, fled with precipitation to their boats, and rowed off. They had seventeen large baidars and several small canoes. The screens which they left behind were made of three rows of stakes placed perpendicularly, and bound together with sea-weed and osiers, twelve feet broad and above half a yard thick.

The islanders now appearing sufficiently intimidated, the Russians built a winter hut of drift wood, and waited the approach of spring without further
an-

annoyance. Although they saw none of the inhabitants, yet Glottof kept his people together; sending out occasionally small hunting and fishing parties to a lake, five versts from the creek. During the whole winter they caught in the lake several different species of trout and salmon, soles, and herrings, a span and a half long, and even turbot and cod-fish, which ascended with the flood.

At last, on the 25th of December, two islanders visited the ship, and conversed at a distance by means of interpreters; but soon departed without paying any attention to the proposals of peace and trade made by the Russians; nor did any of them appear again before the 4th of April. Want of sufficient exercise in the mean time brought on a violent scurvy among the crew, of which nine died.

On the 4th of April four natives made their appearance, and seemed to pay more attention to the proposals; at last one of them advanced, and offered to barter two fox-skins for beads. They did not set the least value upon other goods of various kinds, such as shirts, linen, and nankeen; but demanded glass beads of different colours, for which they exchanged skins with pleasure. This friendly traffic, together with Glottof's entreaties, operated powerfully, and after holding a consultation with their countrymen, they returned with a solemn declaration, that their brethren would in future commit no hostilities. From that time until their departure a daily intercourse was carried on with the islanders, who brought fox and sea-otter skins, and received in exchange a stipulated number of beads. Some were even persuaded to pay a tribute of skins, for which receipts were given.

Among other wares the Russians procured two small carpets, curiously platted and interwoven with beaver-wool like velvet. The islanders brought also for sale, well dressed sea-otter skins, the hair of which was thorn with sharp stones, and appeared like velvet. The caps of the natives had surprising and sometimes not ungraceful decorations, some being adorned with manes like a helmet; others, seemingly peculiar to the females, were made of intestines stitched together with rein-deer hair and sinews in a most elegant taste, and ornamented on the crown with long streamers of hair died a beautiful red. Of all these curiosities Glottof carried samples to Kamtchatka*.

The natives differ considerably in dress and language from the inhabitants of the other Fox Islands; and several species of animals were observed upon Kadyak, which are not to be found on the other islands, viz. ermines, martens, beavers, river-otters, wolves, and wild boars. The tracks of bears were also observed. Some of the inhabitants had clothes made with the skins of rein-deer and the jevras, a sort of small marmoset. Both these skins were probably procured from the continent of America. Black, brown, and red foxes, were seen in great number; and the coast abounds with sea-dogs, sea-bears, sea-lions, and sea-otters. The birds are cranes, geese, ducks, gulls, ptarmigans, crows, and magpies; but no uncommon species was discovered. The vegetable productions are bilberries, cranberries, whortleberries, and

* These and several similar ornaments are preserved in a cabinet of curiosities at the Academy of Sciences of St. Petersburg: a cabinet which well merits the attention of the curious traveller; for it contains a large collection of the dresses of the Eastern nations. Amongst the rest, one compartment is entirely filled with the dresses, arms, and implements, brought from the New-discovered islands. Engravings of these caps, dresses, and ornaments, are found in Cook, Vancouver, and Sauer.

wild

wild lily-roots. Kadyak likewise yields willows and alders, which affords the strongest proof of its vicinity to the continent. The extent of Kadyak cannot be exactly ascertained; as the Russians, through fear of the natives, did not venture to explore the country.

The inhabitants, like those of the Aleutian and nearer islands, perforate holes in the under-lips and the gristle of the nose, in which they insert the bones of birds and animals worked into the form of teeth. Their clothes are made with the skins of birds, foxes, sea-otters, young rein-deer, and marmosets, sewed together with sinews. They wear also fur-stockings of rein-deer skins, but no breeches. Their arms are bows, arrows, and lances, whose points, as well as their small hatchets, are of sharp flint: some few make knives and lance-points of rein-deer bones. Their wooden shields are called kuyaky, which amongst the Greenlanders signifies a small canoe. Their manners are altogether rude; they are not courteous to strangers, nor do they shew any kind of deference or submission to each other.

Some of their canoes contain only one or two persons; others are larger, and similar to the womens' boats of the Greenlanders. Their food consists chiefly of raw and dried fish, partly caught at sea with bone hooks, and partly in rivulets, by means of bag-nets made of sinews. They call themselves Kanagist, a name that has no small resemblance to Karalit; by which appellation the Greenlanders and Esquimaux on the coast of Labrador distinguish themselves: the difference between these two denominations is occasioned perhaps by a change of pronunciation, or by a mistake of the Russian sailors. Their numbers seem very considerable on that part of the island where they had fixed habitations.

Kadyak

Kadyak makes with Aghunashka, Umnak, and the small intermediate islands, a continued Archipelago, extending N. E. and E. N. E. towards America: it lies by the ship's reckoning in 230° of longitude; so that it cannot be far distant from that part of the American coast which Beering formerly reached.

The large island Alakfu, lying northward from Kadyak where Puskaref* wintered, must be still nearer the continent: and the account given by its inhabitants of a great promontory, called Ataktak, stretching from the continent N. E. of Alakfu, is not improbable.

Although the conduct of the islanders appeared more friendly; yet, on account of their numbers, Glottof resolved not to pass another winter on Kadyak, and prepared for his departure. He wanted hoops for repairing his water-casks, and learning from the natives that there were trees at no great distance from the bay, he dispatched, on the 25th of April, Lukas Ftoruskin with eleven men to fell wood. After rowing along the South coast forty or fifty versts, he observed, half a verst from the shore, in vallies between the rocks, alders, similar to those of Kamtschatka; the largest of which were from four to seven inches in diameter. After felling as much wood as he wanted, he returned the same day without perceiving an islander or habitation.

They brought the vessel down the creek in May; and, after taking in all the peltry and stores, left Kadyak on the 24th. Contrary winds retarded their voyage, and drove them near the island Alakfu, which they passed;

* See chapter 6.

their water being nearly exhausted, they afterwards landed upon another island, called Saktunak, in order to procure a supply. At last on the 3d of July, they reached Umnak, and anchored in a bay which Glottof had formerly visited. Going a-shore in a baidar, he found his hut, which was in ruins; and near it observed another Russian dwelling, that had been built in his absence; in which lay a murdered Russian. Resolving to procure further information, he crossed the island the 5th of July, with sixteen of his crew, and discovered the remains of a burnt vessel, some prayer-books, images, &c.; but all the iron-work and cordage were carried off. Near the spot he found also a bathing room filled with murdered Russians in their clothes. From some marks, he concluded that this was the crew of the vessel fitted out by Protassof; nor was he mistaken in his conjectures.

Alarmed at the fate of his countrymen, Glottof returned to the ship. Seven islanders now advanced in baidars, and expressed a desire to trade. They held up sea-otter skins at a distance, but would not venture on board; and by the interpreter desired Glottof and two of his people to come on shore and barter. Glottof, distrusting the savages, refused to comply with their demands; on which they landed, and fired at the vessel, but without effect. They were even bold enough to row towards the vessel a second time. In order if possible to procure intelligence, every method of conciliating them was tried by means of the interpreters; and at last one approached the ship, and demanded victuals, which being thrown to him, he came on board. He then related the fate of the vessel seized by the islanders; and gave some intelligence concerning the fugitives under the command of Korovin. He confessed, that their design was to entice Glottof on shore, kill him, and make themselves masters of the ship; for which purpose more than thirty islanders

islanders were posted in ambush behind the nearest rocks. Glottof having detained the islander on board, landed with a strong party, attacked the savages : who shot both with arrows and muskets, but without effect, and were soon forced to retire to their canoes.

July 14, a violent storm arose, in which Glottof's vessel parted her cable, and was forced on shore, but without any other loss than that of an anchor. The crew through want of fresh provisions, became so sickly, that they were almost defenceless. On the 28th of July, Glottof, with ten men, went for that part of the island, where, according to information he expected to find Korovin; but discovered only parts of the wreck. On the 2d of August, as he was returning, five islanders approached him in canoes, and informed him, that on the other side of the island he would find Korovin with his people, who were building a hut on the bank of a rivulet. Glottof and his companions accordingly went over land to the place pointed out by the islanders, and found Korovin conformable to their information. The circumstances of their junction and separation are related in the preceding chapter.

Glottof having now resolved to winter on Umnak, laid up his vessel. On the 2d of September Korovin, was at his own desire dispatched with a hunting party in two baidars. On his return, in May 1765, they received the first intelligence of the arrival of Soloviof's vessel, which lay before Unalashka*. None of the islanders appeared near the harbour during winter, and there were none probably at that time upon Umnak; for Glottof made excursions on all sides, went once round the island, and found all the habitations empty.

* Chapter 11.

He likewise examined the country, and caused a strict search to be made after the remains of the plundered vessel.

According to Glottof's account, Umnak is about three hundred versts in circumference. It contains several rivulets, which take their rise from lakes, and fall into the sea after a very short course. No trees were observed on the island, and the vegetables were the same as those of Kamtchatka.

The following summer small parties of the inhabitants were seen; but they fled upon the approach of the Russians. Some of them were at last persuaded to hold a friendly intercourse, and pay tribute; by which means the Russians recovered part of the arms, anchors, and iron-work of the plundered vessel. They continued to trade with the natives during the summer of 1765, for the skins of foxes and sea-otters.

In the winter hunting parties were sent out in Umnak as well as to Unalashka; and in July 1766, Glottof, without meeting with more difficulties, began his voyage homewards. We shall here conclude with a copy of his journal kept on board; from which, inferences with regard to the situation of the islands may be drawn.

Journal of Glottof, on board the Andrean and Natalia:

1762.

- Oct.* 1. Sailed from Kamtchatka Bay.
2. Wind Southerly, steered between E. and S E. three hours.
3. Wind S. E. worked at N. E. course sixteen hours.
4. From midnight sailed East with a fair wind, eighteen hours.
- Oct.* 5. At six o'clock A. M. discovered Beering's Island distant about eighteen
 verss.
6. At one o'clock came to anchor on the South East point of Copper
 Island.
7. At eight A. M. sailed to the South side of the Island, anchored there at ten
 o'clock.

1763.

- July* 26. Sailed from Copper Island at five P. M.
27. Sailed with a fair S. S. W wind, seventeen hours.
28. Made little way.
29. Drove—wind E. N. E.
30. Ditto
31. Ditto

- Aug.* 1. Ditto
2. At eleven A. M. wind N. E. steered E.

Aug.

- Aug. 3. Wind W. S. W. sailed eight knots an hour, two hundred and fifty versts.
4. Wind South—sailed one hundred and fifty versts.
 5. Wind ditto—sailed one hundred and twenty-six versts.
 6. Wind ditto, three knots, forty-five versts.
 7. Calm.
 8. During the night gentle S. E. wind, steered N. E. at two and a half knots.
 9. Forenoon calm. At two o'clock, P. M. gentle N. E. wind, steered between E. N. E. and S. E. at the rate of three knots.
 10. Morning, wind E. N. E. afterwards S. S. W. with which steered N. E.
 11. At five o'clock the wind S. S. E. steered E. N. E. at the rate of three knots.
 12. Wind S. steered E. two and a half knots, sailed fifty versts.
 13. Wind S. S. E. steered E. four and a half knots, sailed ninety versts.
 14. Wind W. N. W. at two knots, sailed thirty versts.
 15. The wind freshened, at four knots, sailed sixty versts.
 16. Wind N. N. E. steered E. S. E. at three knots, sailed thirty versts.
 17. Wind E. S. E. and S. E. light breezes and changeable.
 18. Wind S. E. steered N. E. at three and a half knots, sailed in twelve hours twenty-two versts.
 19. Wind S. and light breezes, steered E. at three knots, sailed in eight hours eleven versts.
 20. Before day-break calm; three hours after sun-rise a breeze sprung up at S. E. steered E. N. E. at three knots, and sailed twenty versts.
 22. Calm.
 23. Wind S. S. E. during the night, the ship sailed at the rate of two knots; the wind afterwards came round to the S. S. W. and the ship sailed at five to six knots these twenty-four hours, one hundred and fifty versts.
 24. Saw land at day-break; at three knots, sailed forty-five versts.

Aug. 25. Wind W S. W. sailed along the coast these twenty four hours, fifty versts.

26. Wind N. W. steered N. E. at five and a half knots, one hundred versts

27. Wind E. N. E. the ship drove towards land, on which discovered a high mountain.

28. Wind N. E. and stormy, the ship drove.

29. Wind N. W. steered E. N. E. at the rate of three knots.

30. Wind S. S. E. at six knots, steering again towards land.

31. A violent storm, wind west.

Sept. 1. Wind West, steered N. E. at the rate of three knots towards land.

2. Wind S. W. steered N. E. towards land at five knots.

3. Wind S. W. drove N. N. E. along the coast.

4. Wind W. N. W. steered N. E. at four knots, sailed one hundred versts.

5. Wind N. W. steered E. N. E. at three knots, and towards evening came to anchor off the Island Kadyak.

1764.

May 24. Sailed from Kadyak.

25. Wind N. W. and made but little way W. S. W.

26. Wind W ship drove towards S. E.

27. Wind W. S. W. ship drove E. S. E. The same day the wind came round to the S. when steered again towards Kadyak.

28. Wind E. S. E. fell in with the island Alaska or Alaksu.

29. Wind S. W. steered N. W.

30. Wind W. N. W. the ship drove under the foresail.

31. Wind W. drove to the Southward.

June

June 1. Wind W. S. W. landed on the Island Saktunak, for a supply of water!

2. Wind S. E. steered S. W. along the island at three knots.
3. Wind N. E. steered W. S. W. at the rate of three to four knots, sailing in these twenty-four hours one hundred versts.
4. Calm.
5. At eight o'clock A. M. a small breeze S. E.
6. Wind E. afterwards calm. Towards evening the Wind S. E. steered S. W. at three knots, and unexpectedly discovered land ahead, which kept clear of with difficulty.

From the 7th to the 10th at anchor off a small cliff.

10. A hard gale at S. the ship drove foul of the anchor, stood out to sea steering E.
11. Anchored again at a small distance from land.
13. Wind S. S. W. stood out to sea and steered E. S. E.
14. Wind W. S. W. steered S. S. E. at the rate of one knot.
15. Calm.
16. Wind S. steered W. at one knot, the ship drove a little to the Northward.
17. Wind S. S. E. steered W. S. W. at three knots.
18. Calm.
19. Ditto.
20. Wind N. E. steered S. W. and sailed this day about eighty-seven versts.
21. The wind blowing right ahead, came to anchor off an unknown island, where continued till the 25th, when stood out to sea early in the morning.
26. Wind W. N. W. afterwards W. steered S. E.
27. Calm, in the night a small but favourable breeze.
28. Wind N. W. continued the course, at the rate of two to three knots*.

* Lief man bey nordwest wind auf den ours zu 2 bis 3 knoten.

July

June 29. Wind N. E. steered W. at three to four knots, and saw land.

30. Wind N. E. steered S. W. at the rate of seven knots.

July 1. With the same wind and course, at the rate of five knots, sailed two hundred versts.

2. Fell in with the island Umnak, and came to an anchor under a small island until next day; when brought the ship into the harbour, and laid her up.

1766.

June 13. Brought the ship into the harbour, and continued at anchor there until the third of July.

July 3. Got under weigh.

4. Wind E.

5. A South West wind drove the ship about fifty versts N. E.

6. Wind S. sailed about sixty versts W.

Wind W. S. W. the ship drove to the Northward.

8. Wind N. W. steered S. at the rate of one knot.

9. Wind N. W. steered the whole day W. S. W.

10. Wind S. S. W. sailed about forty versts W. N. W.

11. Wind S. W. continued the same course, sailed only five versts.

12. Continued the same course, and sailed fifty-five versts.

13. For the most part calm.

14. Wind W. N. W. and stormy, the ship drove under the foresail.

15. Wind S. sailed on the proper course one hundred versts.

16. Wind E. S. E. sailed W. S. W. at the rate of six knots, one hundred versts.

17. Wind N. N. W. sailed S. W. at the rate of two knots, thirty versts.

July

July 18. Wind S. steered W. at the rate of five knots, and sailed one hundred and thirty versts.

19. Wind S. W. the ship drove under the foresail.

20. Wind E. N. E. steered W. N. W. at the rate of three knots.

21. Wind E. N. E. at the rate of four to five knots sailed two hundred versts.

22. Wind N. E. at four and a half knots, one hundred and fifty versts.

23. Wind E. N. E. steered W. at three knots, one hundred versts.

24. Wind E. steered W. at the rate of three knots, fifty versts.

25. Wind N. E. steered W. at five knots, one hundred versts.

26. The wind continued N. E. and freshened, steered W. at the rate of seven knots, two hundred versts.

27. A small breeze N. N. W. with which however sailed one hundred and fifty versts.

28. Wind being W. S. W. drove twenty-four hours under bare-poles.

29. Wind South, steered W. at the rate of two knots, forty-eight versts—this day saw land.

30. Wind S. S. E. sailed, at the rate of four knots, ninety-six versts, and approached the land, which found to be the island Karaga.

From the 1st to the 13th of August, continued our voyage towards the mouth of Kamtchatka river, sometimes plying, sometimes driving, and at last arrived happily with a rich cargo.

CHAP. 10.

Voyage of Soloviof in the St. Peter and Paul, 1764—He passes two Winters upon Unalashka—Attempts of the Natives to destroy the Crew—Return of Soloviof to Kamtchatka—Journal of his Voyage—Description of the Islands Umnak and Unalashka—Productions—Inhabitants—Their Manners—Customs, &c. &c.

IN 1764, Jacob Ulednikof, merchant of Irkutsk, and company, fitted out a ship called the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, under the command of Ivan Soloviof; which sailed from the mouth of Kamtchatka river on the 25th of August. The crew consisted of fifty-five men, among whom were some of the owners, and thirteen Kamtchadals.

They steered at first S. E. with the wind N. W. but on its turning southerly they shaped their course E. N. E. On the 27th one of the Russian sailors died off Kamtchatka point; and the 31st they made Beering's Island, which they passed on their left. The 1st and 2d of September they were becalmed, and the wind springing up at W. S. W. continued their former course; the 5th they sailed with the wind at south; but that day and the 6th, from changeable breezes and calms, made no way; from the 7th to the 13th, they sailed E. S. E. with southerly and westerly winds; and from that time to the 15th east, with the wind at west.

September 16, they made the island Umnak, where Soloviof had formerly been with Nikiphorof. As they sailed along the Northern shore, three islanders

islanders approached in baidars; but, the crew having no interpreter, they would not venture on board. Finding no good bay, Soloviof proceeded through a strait, which separates Umnak from Unalashka, lay-to during the night, and early on the 17th dropped anchor at the distance of two hundred yards from the shore, in a bay on the north side of Unalaska.

From thence the captain dispatched Gregory Korenof with twenty men in a baidar, with orders to land, reconnoitre the country, find out the nearest habitations, and report the disposition of the people. Korenof returned the same day, with the account that he had discovered dwellings abandoned and demolished, in which he had found traces of Russians, viz. a written legend, and a broken musket-stock. In consequence of this intelligence, they endeavoured to enter the mouth of a river called by the natives Tshikanok, and by the Russians Ofernia, but the water was too shallow. They landed however their tackle and lading. No natives made their appearance until the 22d, when two came and welcomed the Russians. They told their names, and were recognized by Soloviof, who had known them on a former expedition, when Agiak, one of the two, served as an interpreter; the other, whose name was Kashmak, had continued some time with the crew in the same capacity.

They recounted the circumstances which attended the loss of Kulkof's, Protassof's, and Trapeznikof's vessels; from the last of which Kashmak had escaped by flight. Agiak had been interpreter to Protassof's company; and related that the islanders, after murdering the hunting detachments of the Russians, came to the harbour, and having entered the ship under the most friendly appearances, suddenly attacked and slew the crew. He had con-



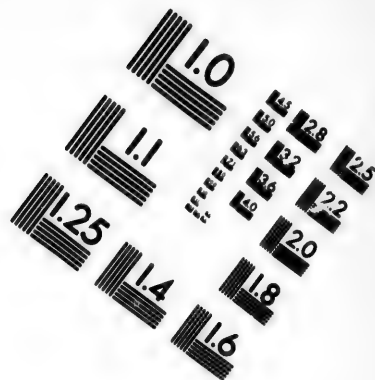
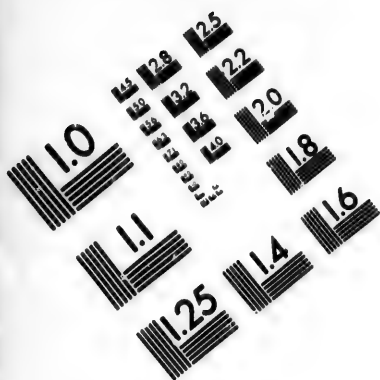
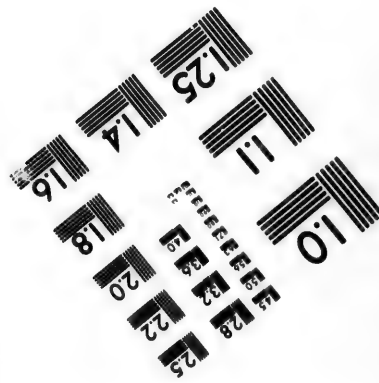
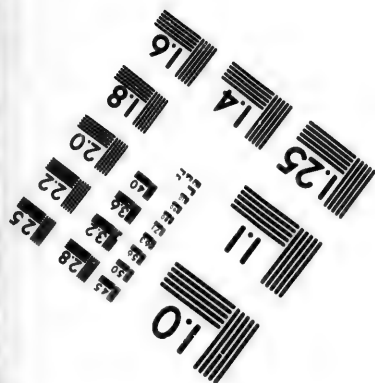
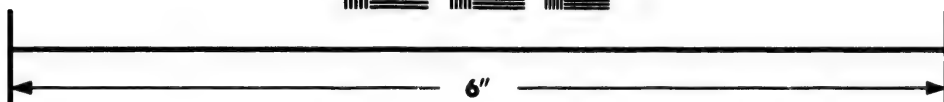
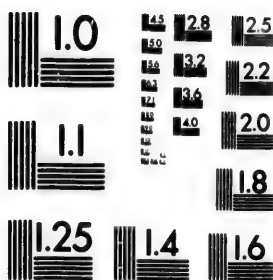


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14590
(716) 872-4503



cealed himself under a bench till the departure of the murderers, and since that time, Kashmak and himself had lived as fugitives; and in the course of their wanderings had learned the following intelligence from the girls who were gathering berries in the fields: The Toigons of Umnak, Akutan, and Toshko, with their relations of Unalashka, had formed a confederacy; they agreed not to disturb any Russians on their first landing, but to attack them at the same time in their different hunting excursions. They acquainted him also with Glottof's arrival at Umnak.

Soloviof alarmed by these unfavourable reports, doubled his watch; and used every precaution against attacks. But wanting wood to repair his vessel, and desirous to ascertain the situation of the island, he dispatched on the 29th a party of thirty men, with the interpreter, to its western extremity. In three or four hours they rowed to Ankonon, a point of land, where they found a village, consisting of two large dwelling caves, opposite to which was a small island. As soon as the inhabitants saw them approaching, they escaped in their baidars, leaving their dwellings empty; in which the Russians found several skeletons, supposed by the interpreter to be the remains of ten murdered sailors of Trapeznikof's company. With much persuasion the interpreter prevailed on the islanders to return, but they kept at a wary distance.

Soloviof attempted to cut off their retreat with a view to secure some hostages, but they took the alarm and began an attack. The Russians then fired and pursued them; four were killed, and seven taken prisoners, among whom was the Toigon of the little island Sedak. These prisoners, being bound and examined, confessed that many of Korovin's crew had been here murdered; and the Toigon sent people to bring muskets, some kettles and
and

and tackle, plundered by the natives. They also brought intelligence that Korovin, with a party in two baidars, had taken shelter at a place called Inalga. On this information letters being dispatched to Korovin, he joined them the 2d of October.

At the time of his arrival, the savages made another attack on Soloviof's watch with knives; which obliged them to fire, and six of the assailants were killed on the spot. The captive Toigon excused this attempt of his people, by ascribing it to their fears, lest out of revenge Korovin should put all the prisoners to death. Soloviof, for the greater security, sent the prisoners by land to the haven; while Korovin and his party went by sea. The Toigon however was treated kindly; and even permitted to return home on condition of leaving his son as an hostage. In consequence of this kind behaviour, the inhabitants of three other villages, Agulak, Kutchlok, and Makuski, presented hostages of their own accord.

From the remaining timber of the old dwelling the Russians built a new hut; and on the 14th laid up the vessel. Koronof being sent on a reconnoitring party to the southern side of the island, which in that part was not more than five or six versts broad, proceeded with his companions, sometimes rowing in canoes, and sometimes dragging them over by land. On the 20th he returned and reported, that he had found an empty habitation upon the coast on the further side of the island; he rowed from thence eastward along the shore, and behind the first point of land came to an island in the next bay; where he discovered forty islanders of both sexes lodged under their baidars, who by his friendly behaviour had been induced to give

three hostages. These people afterwards settled in the empty hut, and came frequently to the harbour.

On the 28th of October, Soloviof himself went on a reconnoitring party towards the north-east end of the island. He rowed from the first promontory across a bay; and found on the opposite point of land a dwelling-place called Agulok, about four hours row from the harbour; it was occupied by thirteen men and about forty women and children, who delivered several gunbarrels and ships-stores, and informed him of two of Korovin's crew who had been murdered.

November 5, they proceeded, and after five or six hours rowing, saw on a point of land another dwelling called Ikutchlok, beyond which the interpreter shewed them the haven where Korovin's ship had anchored. This was called Makushinsky Bay; and on an island within it they found two Toigons, Itchadak and Kagumaga, with an hundred and eighty people of both sexes employed in hunting sea-bears. These natives not being hostile, Soloviof established a friendly intercourse with them. He remained there until the 10th, when the Toigons invited him to their winter quarters, which lay about five hours sail to the east: there he found two dwelling caves, each forty yards square, near a rivulet, abounding with fish, which fell from a lake into a little bay. In the neighbourhood of this little village is a hot spring, which is only to be seen at ebb tide; from thence he departed the 25th, but was forced back by storms, and detained until the 6th of December.

Kagumaga then accompanied him to another dwelling-place called Totzikala;
both

both the Toigon and the interpreter advised him to be on his guard against the natives, whom they represented as savage, sworn enemies to the Russians, and the murderers of nine of Kulkof's crew. For these reasons Soloviof passed the night on the open coast, and next morning sent the Toigon to inspire the natives with more friendly sentiments. Some listened to his representations; but the greater part fled on his approach, and he found four dwelling caves, almost empty, in which he secured himself with suitable precaution. Here he discovered three hundred darts and ten bows with arrows, which he destroyed, after reserving one bow and seventeen arrows as curiosities. By friendly arguments he urged the few natives who remained to lay aside their enmity, and persuade their leaders and relations to return.

On the 10th about a hundred men and a still greater number of women returned; but the fairest speeches had no effect; they kept aloof and prepared for hostilities, which they began on the 17th by an open attack. Nineteen of them were killed, amongst whom was Inlogufak one of their leaders, and the most inveterate fomenter of hostilities against the Russians. The other leader Aguladock being taken, confessed, that, on receiving the first news of Soloviof's arrival, they had resolved to attack the crew, and burn the ship. But notwithstanding this confession, no injury was offered to him; he was prevailed upon to give his son as an hostage, and order his people to live on friendly terms with the Russians. In January, the natives delivered in three anchors, and a quantity of tackle, which had been saved from a vessel formerly wrecked on the coast; and at the same time brought three boys and two young girls as pledges of their future fidelity.

January

January 25, Soloviof set out for the haven where his ship lay, and before his departure the Toigons of Makushinsk paid of their own accord a double tribute.

February 1, Kulumaga of Makushinsk, Agidalok of Totzikala, and Imaginak of Ugamitzi, Toigons of Unalashka, with their relations, came to Soliviof and acquainted him with the arrival of a Russian ship at Unimak, the sixth island to the east of Agunalashka; adding, that they knew none of the crew except a Kamtchadal named Kirilko, who had been there on a former occasion; that the natives, after cutting off part of the crew in two baidars, had found means to overpower the remainder, and destroyed the vessel. From the name of Kamtchadal, they concluded that this must have been another vessel fitted out by Nikiphor Trapeznikof and company, of which no further information was ever received. Willing to procure better intelligence, they endeavoured to persuade the Toigons to send a party of their people to Unimak, but the people excused themselves, on account of the great distance and their dread of the inhabitants.

February 16, Soloviof set out a second time for the west end of the island, where they had formerly taken prisoner, and afterwards liberated, the Toigon of Sedak, and proceeded to Ikolga, a single hut which lies on the bay. On the 26th he came to Takamitka, where there is only one hut on a point of land by the side of a rivulet. Here he met with Korovin, in whose company he cut the blubber of a whale, which the waves had cast on shore; after this Korovin crossed the gulph to Umnak, and Soloviof proceeded to Ikaltshinsk, where on the 9th one of his party was carried off by sickness.

March

March 15, he returned to the haven, having met with no opposition from the islanders during his excursion. On his return he found one of the crew dead, and a dreadful scurvy raging among the rest; of which five died in March, eight and a Kamtchadal in April, and six more in May. About this time the islanders were observed to pay frequent visits to the hostages; and on inquiring privately into the reason, some of them owned that the inhabitants of Makushinsk had formed the design of cutting off the crew, and making themselves masters of the vessel. Soloviof had now great reason to be apprehensive; for his people were afflicted with the scurvy to so violent a degree, that only twelve were capable of defending themselves. These circumstances did not escape the observation of the natives; and they were inspired with fresh courage to renew their hostilities.

On the 27th of May the Russians perceived the Toigon of Itchadak, who had formerly paid a voluntary tribute, near the shore, accompanied by several islanders in three baidars. Soloviof calling to him by the interpreter, he landed, but kept at a distance, desiring a conference with some of his relations. Soloviof gave orders to seize him; and he was taken with two of his companions. He immediately confessed, that he had come with a view to inquire of the hostages how many Russians were still remaining; having procured the necessary intelligence, his intention was to surprise the watch and afterwards set fire to the ship. He pointed out several islanders who were passing the harbour as assembling to execute that design. They separated, however, without attempting any hostilities.

June 5, Glottof visited the harbour and returned on the 8th to his ship. The captive Toigon was now set at liberty, after being seriously exhorted to desist

defist from hostilities. In the course of this month two more of the crew died ; so that the arrival of Korovin, who joined them with two of his own and two of Kulkof's crew, was a fortunate circumstance. The sick began to recover gradually.

July 22, Soloviof, with a party, in two baidars, made another excursion northwards ; he passed the places formerly mentioned as far as Igonok, which lies ten versts beyond Totzikala, and consists of one dwelling cave on the side of a rivulet, which was inhabited by thirty men, with their wives and children. From thence Soloviof proceeded along the shore into a bay ; five versts further he found another rivulet, which has its source among the hills, and flows through a plain.

Upon the shore of the same bay, opposite the mouth of this rivulet, lay two villages, one of which only was inhabited ; it was called Ukunadok, and consisted of six dwelling caves. About thirty-five of the inhabitants were employed in catching salmon in the rivulet. Kulkof's ship had lain at anchor at the distance of two miles, but no remains were to be found. Hence Soloviof proceeded forward to the summer village Umgaina, distant seven or eight leagues, and situated on the side of a rivulet abounding with salmon. Here he found the Toigon Amaganak, with ten of the natives employed in fishing. Fifteen versts beyond was another summer village called Kalaktak, also by the side of a rivulet. The inhabitants were sixty men and an hundred and seventy women and children : they gave Soloviof a friendly reception, and delivered two hostages, who were brought from the neighbouring island Akutan ; with these he returned, and on the 6th of August joined his crew

On

On the 11th, he went over to the island Umnak, to bring off some ships' stores left there by Korovin, who accompanied him, and returned to the haven on the 27th. On the 31st Shaffyrin died, whose adventures have been already related*.

September 19, Koronof being sent northwards upon an hunting party, returned the 30th of January, 1766. Although the Russians who remained at the haven met with no molestation from the natives during his absence; yet, he and his companions were repeatedly attacked. Having distributed to the inhabitants of the several villages through which he passed, nets for catching sea-otters, he went to the east part of the island as far as Kalaktak, with an intention to hunt. Upon his arrival at that place, the 31st of October, the inhabitants fled with precipitation; and all his efforts to conciliate their affections were vain. On the following day they returned in a considerable body, armed with lances, made from the iron of the plundered vessels. Korenof and his companions were prepared to receive them, killed twenty-six, and took several prisoners; upon which the rest became more tractable.

November 19, Korenof, on his return, came to Makushinsk, where he was kindly received by the Toigon Kulumaga; but the designs of Itchadak were still hostile. Instead of giving an account of the nets which had been left with him, he withdrew privately; and on the 19th of January, accompanied by a numerous body of islanders, made an attempt to surprize the Russians. Victory again declared for Korenof; and fifteen of the assailants, amongst whom was Itchadak himself, were killed. Kulumaga assured them in the strongest manner, that the design had been formed without his knowledge; and

* Chapter 8.

protested, that he had often prevented his friend from committing acts of hostility.

Korenof returned to the haven on the 30th of January; and on the 4th of February went upon another hunting expedition towards the western point of the island. During this excursion he met with a party, sent out by Glottof, at a place called Takamitka; he then rowed over to Umnak, where he collected a small tribute, and returned on the 3d of March. During his absence Kyginik, Kulumaga's son, paid a visit to the Russians, and requested that he might be baptized, which was complied with.

May 13, Korovin went with fourteen men to Umnak, to bring off an anchor, which was buried in the sand. On his return, preparations were made for their departure. Before the arrival of Korovin the hunters had killed one hundred and fifty black and brown foxes, and the same number of old and young sea-otters: since his arrival they had caught three hundred and fifty black foxes, the same number of common foxes, and one hundred and fifty sea-otters of different sizes.

This cargo being put on board, the interpreter Kashmak set at liberty, with a certificate and rewards for his fidelity, and the hostages delivered up to the Toigons and their relations, Soloviof put to sea on the 1st of June, with an easterly wind. Before his departure he received a letter from Glottof, informing him that he was likewise preparing for his return.

June

- June* 3. The wind being contrary, they got but a small way from land.
5. Steered again towards the shore, came to an anchor, and sent a boat for a supply of water, which returned without having seen any body.
6. Weighed and steered W. with a S. E. wind.
7. Favourable wind at N. E. and in the afternoon at N.
8. Wind at N. W. and stormy, the ship drove under the foresail.
- 9 & 10. Sailed Northwards, with a Westerly wind.
11. Calm till noon; afterwards a breeze sprung up at S. with which they steered W. till next day at noon; when the wind coming round to the West, they changed their course, and steered N. W.
12. Calm during the night.
13. A small breeze of Northerly wind, with which they steered W. In the afternoon it fell calm, and continued so till the
- 16th, at noon, when a breeze springing up at East they steered W. on which course they continued during the
- 18th, with a S. S. E. wind.
- From the 19th to the 22d the wind was changeable from the S. W. to N. W. with which they still made a shift to get to the Westward.
23. The wind E. they steered betwixt N. & W. which course they continued the
- 24th, 25th, 26th, with a Northerly wind.
27. A. M. the wind changed to S. W.
- 28, 29, 30. Wind at West.
- July* 1. The wind changed to E. with which they steered between W. and S. W. with little variation, till the 3d.
4. They reached Kamtchatkoi Noss, and on the
- 5th, brought the ship in good condition, into Kamtchatka river.

Soloviof's description of these islands and the inhabitants, is more circumstantial than the accounts given by former navigators. According to his estimation, the island Unalashka lies between one thousand five hundred and two thousand versts due east from the mouth of the Kamtchatka river; the other islands to the eastward stretch towards N. E. He reckons the length of Akutan eighty versts; Umnak an hundred and fifty; and Unalashka two hundred. No large trees were seen upon any of the islands which he visited. They produce underwood, small shrubs, and plants, for the most part similar to the common species found in Kamtchatka. The winter is much milder than in the eastern parts of Siberia, and continues only from November to March. The snow seldom lies upon the ground for any considerable time.

Rein-deer, bears, wolves, ice-foxes, are not found on these islands; but they abound in black, grey, brown, and red foxes; for which reason they have acquired the name of Lyffie Ostrova, or Fox Islands. These foxes are stronger than those of Yakutsk; and their hair much coarser. During the day they lie in caves and clefts of rocks; and towards evening approach the shore in search of food; having long extirpated the brood of mice and other small animals. They are not in the smallest degree afraid of the inhabitants, but distinguish the Russians by the scent; as they have experienced the effect of their fire-arms. The number of sea-animals, such as sea-lions, sea-bears, and sea-otters, which resort to these shores, is very considerable. Upon some of the islands warm springs and native sulphur are found.

The Fox Islands are in general very populous; Unalashka, which is the largest, is supposed to contain several thousand inhabitants. These savages live together in several communities, composed of fifty, and sometimes of two

or

or even three hundred persons; they dwell in large caves from forty to eighty yards long, six to eight broad, and from four to five high. The roof of these caves is a kind of wooden grate, over which is first spread a layer of grass, and it is then covered with earth. Several openings are made in the top, through which the inhabitants ascend and descend by ladders; the smallest dwellings have two or three entrances, and the largest five or six. Each cave is divided into a certain number of partitions, which are appropriated to the several families, and these partitions are marked by stakes driven into the earth. The men and women squat on the ground; and the children lie down, having their legs bound together under them, in order to accustom them to sit on their hams.

Although no fire is ever made in these caves, they are generally so warm, that both sexes sit naked. These people obey the calls of nature openly, without deeming it indecent; they wash themselves first with their own urine, and afterwards with water. Even in winter they are always bare-footed; and when they want to warm themselves, especially before they lie down to sleep, they set fire to dry grass and walk over it. Their habitations being almost dark, they use, particularly in winter, a sort of large lamps, made by hollowing out a stone, into which they put a rush-wick and burn train-oil. A stone so hollowed is called Tfaaduck. Their complexion is white with black hair; they have flat faces, and are of a good stature. The men shave with a sharp stone or knife the circumference and top of the head, and let the hair which remains hang from the crown. The women cut their hair in a straight line over the forehead, let it grow behind to a considerable length, and tie it in a bunch. Some of the men wear beards; others shave or pluck the hair out by the roots.

They

They mark various figures on their faces, the backs of their hands, and lower parts of their arms, by pricking them with a needle, and then rubbing the parts with a black clay. They make three incisions in the under-lip; in the middle incision they place a flat bone, or a small coloured stone; and in each of the other two a long pointed piece of bone, which bends and reaches almost to the ears. They likewise make a hole through the gristle of the nose, into which they put a small piece of bone so as to keep the nostrils extended. They bore holes in their ears, and wear in them what little ornaments they can procure.

Their dress consists of a cap and fur coat, made like a shirt, which reaches down to the knee. Some of them wear caps of bird-skin, on which they leave the wings and tail. On the fore-part of their hunting and fishing caps they place a small board like a screen, adorned with the jaw-bones of sea-bears, and ornamented with glass beads which they receive in barter from the Russians, but at their festivals and dancing parties they wear more ornamented caps. The dress of the men is of bird-skins, that of the women of sea-otters and sea-bears; these skins are dyed with a sort of red earth, neatly sewed with sinews, and decorated with various stripes of sea-otter skins and leathern fringes. They have also upper garments made of the intestines of the largest sea-calves and sea-lions.

Their vessels consist of two sorts; the larger are leathern boats or baidars, capable of holding thirty or forty people; the smaller vessels are rowed with a double paddle, resemble the canoes of the Greenlanders, contain only one or two persons, and do not weigh above thirty pounds, being only a slight frame covered with leather. In these they pass from one island to another; and

and even venture out to a considerable distance at sea. In calm weather they catch turbot and cod with bone-hooks, and lines made of sinews or sea-weed; they strike fish in the rivulets with darts. Whales and other sea animals thrown a-shore by the waves are eagerly seized. The provisions which they procure by hunting and fishing being insufficient, the greater part of their food consists of sea-wrack and shell-fish, which they find on the shore.

No stranger is allowed to hunt or fish near a village, or to take away any thing fit for food. When they are on a journey, and their provisions exhausted, they beg from village to village, or call on their friends and relations for assistance.

They feed upon the flesh of sea-animals, and generally eat it raw. But for dressing their viands they use a hollow stone, in which they place the fish or flesh, cover it with another, and close the interstices with lime or clay: they then lay it horizontally upon two stones, and light a fire underneath. The provision intended for keeping is dried without salt in the open air. They gather berries of various sorts, and lily roots of the same species as those which grow wild at Kamtchatka. They are unacquainted with the manner of dressing the cow-parsnip, as practised in that peninsula; and do not understand the art of distilling brandy or any other strong liquor from it. They are very fond of snuff, which the Russians have introduced among them.

No traces were found of any worship, neither did they seem to have any forcerers * among them. When a whale happens to be cast on shore, the

* In the last chapter it is said that there are sorcerers among them.

inhabitants assemble with great marks of joy, and perform a number of extraordinary ceremonies; they dance and beat drums * of different sizes; and then cut up the fish, of which the greatest and best part is consumed on the spot. On such occasions they wear splendid caps, and some of them dance naked in wooden masks †, which reach down to their shoulders, and represent various sorts of sea-animals. Their dances consist of short steps forwards, accompanied with strange gestures.

Marriage ceremonies being unknown among them, each man takes as many wives as he can maintain; but the number seldom exceeds four. These women are occasionally allowed to cohabit with other men, and both they and their children are not unfrequently bartered for commodities. When an islander dies, the body is bound with thongs, and afterwards exposed to the air in a sort of wooden cradle hung on a cross-bar, supported by forks; upon these occasions they cry and make bitter lamentations.

Their Toigons or Princes are those who have numerous families, and are skilful and successful in hunting and fishing.

Their weapons consist of bows and arrows, and of darts which they throw very dexterously, and to a great distance, from a hand-board. For defence

* By the accounts which I procured at Petersburg, concerning the form of these drums, they seem to resemble in shape those made use of by the sorcerers of Kamtchatka, and are of different sizes. I had an opportunity of seeing one of the latter in the Cabinet of Curiosities. It is of an oval form, about two feet long and one broad, covered only at one end like the tambour de basque, and worn on the arm like a shield.

† Sauer has given a plate of the different masks used by these islanders. Plate 11.

they

they use wooden shields, called kuyake. These islanders, notwithstanding their savageness, are very docile; and the boys whom the Russians keep as hostages, soon acquire a knowledge of their language.

CHAP. 12.

Voyage of Otcheredin in the St. Paul, 1765—He winters on Umnak—Arrival of Levasheff upon Unalashka—Return of Otcheredin to Ochotsk.

IN 1765, three merchants, Orekhof of Yula, Lapin of Solikamsk, and Shilof of Ustyug, fitted out a new vessel called the *St. Paul*, under the command of Aphanassei Otcheredin. She was built in the harbour of Okotsk, and the crew consisted of sixty-two Russians and Kamtschadals, with two inhabitants of the Fox Islands, John and Timothy Surgef, who had been brought to Kamtschatka and baptised.

September 10, they sailed from Okotsk, and arrived the 22d in the bay of Bolcheretsk, where they wintered. August 1, 1766, they proceeded on their voyage, and having passed the second of the Kurile Isles, steered on the 6th into the open sea; on the 24th they reached the nearest of the Fox Islands, which the interpreter called Atchak; and a storm arising, they cast anchor in a bay, but saw no inhabitants. On the 26th they again sailed, discovered on the 27th Saguamak, along which they steered north-east, and on the 31st came within seven miles of the island Umnak; where, on account of the lateness of the season and the want of provision and water, they determined to winter.

Accordingly on the 1st of September, by advice of the interpreters, they brought the vessel into a convenient bay near a point of land lying N. W., and moored it.

On landing they discovered several pieces of a wreck. Two islanders, who dwelt on the banks of a rivulet which empties itself into the bay, informed them, that these were the remains of a Russian vessel, whose commander's name was Denys. From this intelligence they concluded that this was Protassof's vessel, fitted out at Okotfk. The inhabitants of Umnak, Unalashka, and of the Five Mountains, had assembled, and murdered the crew, when separated into different hunting parties. The same islanders mentioned the fate of Kulkof's and Trapeznikof's ships upon Unalashka. Although this information occasioned general consternation, yet having no other resource, they drew the vessel ashore, and took precautions against a surprise. They kept a constant watch, made presents to the Toigons and principal inhabitants, and demanded some children as hostages. For some time the islanders behaved peaceably, until the Russians endeavoured to persuade them to become tributary, on which they gave repeated signs of their hostile intentions. In the beginning of September information was brought of the arrival of a vessel, fitted out by Ivan Popof, merchant of Lalsk, at Unalashka.

Towards the end of the month the Toigon of the Five Mountains came to Otcheredin; being satisfied with his reception, brought hostages, and not only assured them of his own friendship, but promised to use his influence with the other Toigons, and persuade them to the same peaceable behaviour, but the other Toigons paid no regard to his persuasion, and even barbarously killed

killed one of his children. From these and other circumstances the crew durst not venture far from the harbour on hunting parties. Hence ensued a scarcity of provisions; and hunger, joined to the violent attacks of the scurvy, made great havoc amongst them; insomuch that six died, and several of the survivors were reduced to so weak a condition, that they were scarcely able to move.

The health of the crew being re-established in the spring, twenty-three men were sent on the 25th of June in two boats to the Five Mountains, in order to persuade the inhabitants to pay tribute. On the 26th they landed on the island Ulaga, where they were attacked with great spirit by the inhabitants; and though three of the Russians were wounded, yet the savages were repulled with considerable loss, and so terrified by this defeat, that they fled before the Russians during their continuance on the island. They were detained there by tempestuous weather until the 9th of July; during which time they found two rusty fire-locks belonging to Protassof's crew. On the 10th they returned to the harbour, and some companies were dispatched on hunting expeditions.

On the 1st of August Matthew Poloskof, a native of Ilinfk, departed with twenty-eight men in two boats to Akutan, Akun, and Unalashka. Poloskof reached Akutan about the end of the month; and being kindly received by the inhabitants, left six of his party to hunt; with the remainder he went to Akun, which lies two versts from Akutan; from whence he dispatched five men to the neighbouring islands, where he was informed by the interpreters there were great quantities of foxes.

Poloskof and his companions continued the whole autumn upon Akun, without being annoyed; but on the 12th of December the inhabitants of the different islands assembled in great numbers, and attacked them by land and sea. They informed Poloskof, by means of the interpreters, that the Russians whom he had sent to the neighbouring islands were killed; that the two vessels at Umnak and Unalashka were plundered and the crews put to death; and that he and his party should share the same fate. The Russian fire-arms however kept them in due respect, and towards evening they dispersed. The same night the interpreter deserted, probably at the instigation of his countrymen, who nevertheless killed him, as it was said, that winter.

January 16, the savages ventured to make a second attack. Having surprised the guard by night, they tore off the roof of the Russian dwelling, and shot down into the hut: by this unexpected assault four Russians were killed, and three wounded; but the survivors with their fire-arms compelled the enemy to fly. Meanwhile another body attempted to seize the two vessels, though without success: they however cut off the party of six men left by Poloskof at Akutan, together with the five hunters dispatched to the contiguous islands, and two of Popof's crew who were at the westernmost part of Unalashka.

Poloskof continued upon Akun in great danger until the 20th of February; when, the wounded being recovered, he sailed with a fair wind to Popof's vessel at Unalashka; and on the 10th of May returned to Otcheredin.

In April, Popof's vessel being ready to depart, the hostages were delivered

to Otcheredin. July 30, another vessel belonging to Popof arrived from Beering's Island, cast anchor in the same bay where Otcheredin lay, and both crews entered into an agreement to share the profits of hunting. Strengthened by this alliance, Otcheredin prevailed upon many of the inhabitants to pay tribute. August 22, Otcheredin's mate was sent with six boats and fifty-eight men to hunt upon Unalashka and Akutan, and thirty men remained with the vessels in the harbour, and kept constant watch.

Soon afterwards Otcheredin and the other commander received a letter from Levashef, Captain Lieutenant of the Imperial fleet, who accompanied Captain Krenitzin in the secret expedition to those islands. The letter, dated September 11, 1768, informed them that he was arrived at Unalashka in the St. Paul, and lay at anchor in the same bay in which Kulkof's vessel had been lost; he likewise required a circumstantial account of their voyages. By another of the 24th he sent for four of the principal hostages; and demanded the tribute of skins which had been exacted from the islanders. But as the weather was generally tempestuous at this season of the year, they deferred sending them till the spring, to St. Peterburgh.

The two vessels remained at Umnak until the year 1770, during which time the crews met with no opposition from the islanders. They continued their hunting parties, in which the share of Otcheredin's vessel (whose voyage is here chiefly related) consisted of five hundred and thirty large sea-otter skins, forty young ones, and thirty cubs, the skins of six hundred and fifty-six fine black foxes, one hundred of an inferior sort, and about one thousand two hundred and fifty red fox skins.

With

With this cargo Otcheredin set sail on the 22d of May, 1770, from Umnak, leaving Popof's crew behind. A short time before their departure, the other interpreter Ivan Surgef deserted at the instigation of his relations.

After touching at the nearest of the Aleutian Islands, Otcheredin arrived on the 24th of July at Okotsk. He brought two islanders with him, who were baptized; the one was named Alexèy Solovief; the other Boris Otcheredin. These islanders unfortunately died on their way to Petersburg; the first between Yakutsk and Irkutsk; and the other at Irkutsk, where he arrived on the 1st of February, 1771.

CHAP. 13.

*Conclusion—General Position and Situation of the Aleütian and Fox Islands—
Further Description of the Dress, Manners, and Customs, of the Inhabitants
—Their Feasts and Ceremonies.*

ACCORDING to the latest informations brought by Otcheredin's and Popof's vessels, the north-west point of Commandorfkoi Ostrof, or Beering's Island, lies due east from the mouth of the Kamtchatka river, distant two hundred and fifty versts; it is from seventy to eighty versts long, and stretches from north-west to south-east. Copper Island is in the same direction, sixty or seventy versts from the south-east point of Beering's Island, and is fifty versts in length.

About three hundred versts east-by-south of Copper Island, lie the Aleütian Isles, of which Attak is the nearest: it is rather larger than Beering's Island, of the same shape, and stretches from west to south-east. From thence about twenty versts eastwards, is situated Semitshi, extending from west to east, and near its eastern point another small island. To the south of the strait, which separates these two islands, and at the distance of forty versts from each, lies Shemiya in a similar position, and not above twenty five versts in length. All these islands stretch between 54° . and 55° . of north latitude.

The Fox Islands are situated E. N. E. from the Aleütians: the nearest, Atchak, is about eight hundred versts distant; it lies in about fifty-six degrees

degrees north latitude, and extends from W. S. W. towards E. N. E. It greatly resembles Copper Island, and is provided with a commodious harbour on the north. From thence all the other islands of this chain stretch in a direction towards N. E. by E.

The next to Atchak is Amlak, about fifteen versts distant; it is nearly of the same size, and has an harbour on the south side. Next follows Sagaugamak, at about the same distance, but somewhat smaller; from hence it is fifty versts to Amukta, a small rocky island, and at the same distance another called Yunakfan. About twenty versts from Yunakfan is a cluster of five small islands, or rather mountains, Kigalgist, Kagamila, Tfigulak, Ulaga, and Tana-Unok, which are therefore called by the Russians *Pät Sopki*, or the Five Mountains. Of these Tana-Unok is the most easterly; N. E. towards which, the western point of Umnak advances within the distance of twenty versts.

Umnak stretches from S. W. to N. E.; it is one hundred and fifty versts in length, and has a very considerable bay on the west end of the northern coast, in which there is a small island or rock, called Adugak; and on the south side is Shamelga, another rock. The western point of Aghunalahka, or Unalahka, is separated from the east end of Umnak by a strait near twenty versts in breadth. The position of these two islands is similar; but Aghunalahka is much the largest, and is above two hundred versts long. It is divided towards the N. E. into three promontories; the first runs out in a westerly direction, forming one side of a large bay on the north coast of the island; the second stretches N. E., ends in three points, and is connected with the island by a small neck of land; and the third or most southerly, is
sepa-

separated from the second by a deep bay. Near Unalashka towards the east lies another small island, called Shirkin.

About twenty versts from the north-east promontory of Aghunalashka lie four islands: the first, Akutan, is about half the size of Umnak; a verst further is the small island Akun; a little beyond is Akunok; and lastly Kigalga, which is the smallest of these four, and stretches with Akun and Akunok almost from N. to S. Kigalga is situated about the sixty-first degree of latitude. About one hundred versts from thence lies an island called Unimak*, upon which Captain Krenitzin wintered; and beyond it the inhabitants said there was a large tract of country called Alashka, of which they did not know the extent.

The Fox Islands are in general very rocky, though they contain no high mountains: they are destitute of wood; but abound in rivulets and lakes, which are mostly without fish. The winter is much milder than in Siberia: the snow seldom falls before the beginning of January, and continues on the ground till the end of March.

There is a volcano in Amuchta; in Kagamila sulphur flows from a mountain: in Taga-Unok there are springs, sufficiently hot to boil provisions, and sulphureous flames are occasionally seen at night on the mountains of Unalashka and Akutan.

The Fox Islands are tolerably populous; the inhabitants are entirely free,

* Krenitzin wintered in the straits of Alaxa, which separate Unimak from Alaxa.

and pay no tribute: they are of a middle stature; and live, both in summer and winter, in holes dug in the earth. No signs of religion were found among them; several persons indeed pass for forcerers, pretending to know things past and future, and are held in high estimation, but receive no emolument. Filial duty and respect towards the aged are not regarded, but the natives are not deficient in fidelity to each other; they are lively and cheerful, though rather impetuous, and choleric. In general, they observe no rules of decency, but follow all the calls of nature publicly, and without the least reserve.

Their principal food consists of fish and other sea-animals, small shell-fish, and sea-plants: their greatest delicacies are wild lillies and other roots, together with different kinds of berries. When they have laid in a store of provisions, they eat at all hours, but in case of necessity are capable of fasting several days together. They seldom heat their dwellings; but when desirous of warming themselves, they light a bundle of hay, and stand over it; or else they set fire to train oil, which they pour into a hollow stone.

They feed their children when young with the coarsest flesh, and for the most part raw. If an infant cries, the mother carries it to the sea-side, and holds it naked in the water until it is quiet. This custom hardens them against the cold, and they go bare-footed through the winter without the least inconvenience. They are also trained to bathe frequently in the sea; and it is an opinion that they are thus rendered bold, and become fortunate in fishing.

The men wear shirts made with the skins of cormorants, sea-divers, and gulls;

gulls; and, to keep out the rain, have upper garments of the bladders and other intestines of sea-lions, sea-calves, and whales, blown up and dried. They cut their hair in a circular form close to their ears; and shave a round place on the crown. The women, on the contrary, let the hair descend over the forehead as low as the eye-brows, and tie the remaining part in a knot on the top of the head. They pierce the ears, and hang therein bits of coral, which they obtain from the Russians. Both sexes make holes in the gristle of the nose, and in the under-lip, in which they thrust pieces of bone, and are very fond of such ornaments. They mark also and colour their faces with different figures. They barter with each other sea-otters, sea-bears, clothes made of bird-skins and of dried intestines, skins of sea-lions and sea-calves for the coverings of baidars, wooden masks, darts, thread made of sinews and rein-deer hair, which they procure from Alaska.

Their household utensils are square pitchers and large troughs. Their weapons are bows and arrows pointed with flints, and javelins of two yards in length, which they throw by means of a small board; instead of hatchets they use crooked knives of flint or bone. Some iron knives, hatchets, and lances, were observed among them, which they had probably obtained by plundering the Russians.

According to the reports of the oldest inhabitants of Umnak and Unalaska, they have never been engaged in any war either among themselves or with their neighbours, except once with the people of Alashka, the occasion of which was as follows: The Toigon of Umnak's son had a maimed hand; some inhabitants of Alashka, who came upon a visit to the island, out of mockery fastened a drum to his arm and invited him to dance. The parents

B b a

and

and relations of the boy being offended at this insult, a quarrel ensued; and from that time the two people have lived in continual enmity, attacking and plundering each other. According to the reports of the islanders, there are mountains on Alashka, and woods of great extent at some distance from the coast. The natives wear clothes made of the skins of rein-deer, wolves, and foxes, and are not tributary to any of their neighbours. The inhabitants of the Fox Islands seem to have no knowledge of any country beyond Alashka.

Feasts are common among these islanders; particularly when the inhabitants of one island are visited by those of the others. The men of the village meet their guests beating drums, and preceded by the women, singing and dancing: they then invite their guests to partake of the feast; after which ceremony they return to their dwellings, place mats in order, and serve up their best provision. The guests next enter, take their places, and after they are satisfied the diversions begin.

First, the children dance, beating their small drums, while the owners of the hut of both sexes sing. Next, the men dance almost naked, tripping after one another, and beating drums of a larger size; when weary, they are relieved by the women, who dance in their clothes, the men continuing to sing and beat their drums. At last the fire which had been kindled for the ceremony is extinguished. If any forcerer is present, he plays his tricks in the dark; if not, the guests retire to their huts, which are made on that occasion of their canoes and mats. The natives who have several wives, do not withhold them from their guests: but where the owner of the hut has but one, he makes the offer of a female servant.

Their

Their hunting season is principally from the end of October to the beginning of December, during which time they kill great numbers of young sea-bears for their skins. They pass all December in similar feasting and diversions to that above mentioned; with this difference, however, the men dance in wooden masks, representing various sea-animals, and painted red, green, or black, with coarse coloured earths.

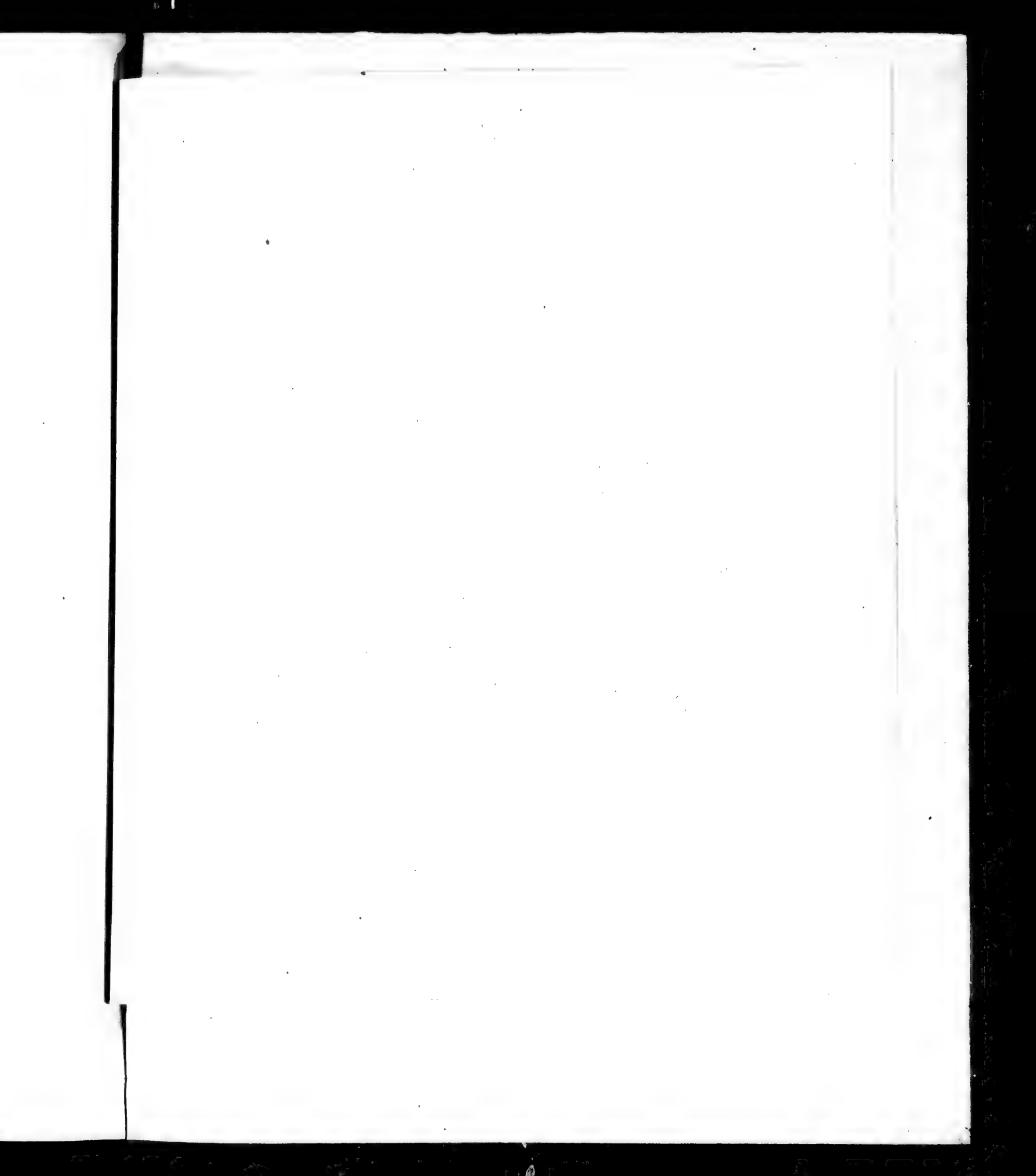
During these festivals they visit each other from village to village, and from island to island. The feasts concluded, the masks and drums are broken to pieces, or deposited in caverns among the rocks, and never afterwards used. In spring they employ themselves in killing old sea-bears, sea-lions, and whales. During summer, and even in winter when it is calm, they row out to sea, and catch cod and other fish. Their hooks are of bone; and for lines they employ a tough sea-weed sometimes near one hundred and sixty yards in length.

Whenever they are wounded or bruised, they apply a yellow root to the wound, and fast for some time. When their head aches, they open a vein with a stone lancet; and when they want to fix the points of their arrows to the shaft, they strike their nose till it bleeds, and use the blood as glue.

Murder is not punished amongst them. Their ceremonies of burying the dead are as follow: The bodies of the inferior people are wrapped up in their clothes, or in mats, then laid in a grave, and covered with earth. The bodies of the chiefs are put, together with their clothes and arms, in a small boat made of drift-wood, which is hung upon poles placed cross-ways, and the body thus left to rot in the open air.

The

The customs and manners of the Aleutians are nearly similar to those of the inhabitants of the Fox Islands. The former indeed are rendered tributary, and subject to Russia; and most of them have a slight acquaintance with the Russian language, which they have acquired from the crews who have landed there.





Wm. Sen. Sculp.

CHAP. 14.

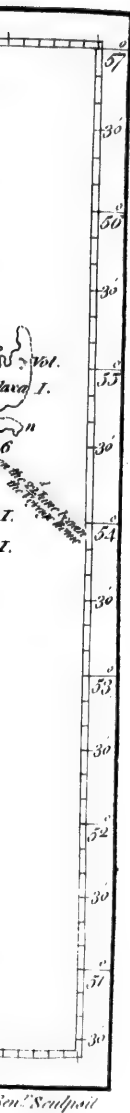
Voyage of Captain Krenitzin and Lieutenant Levashef, to the Fox Islands in 1768 and 1769—Krenitzin winters at Alaska, Levashef upon Unalashka—Productions of Unalashka—Description of the Inhabitants of the Fox Islands.

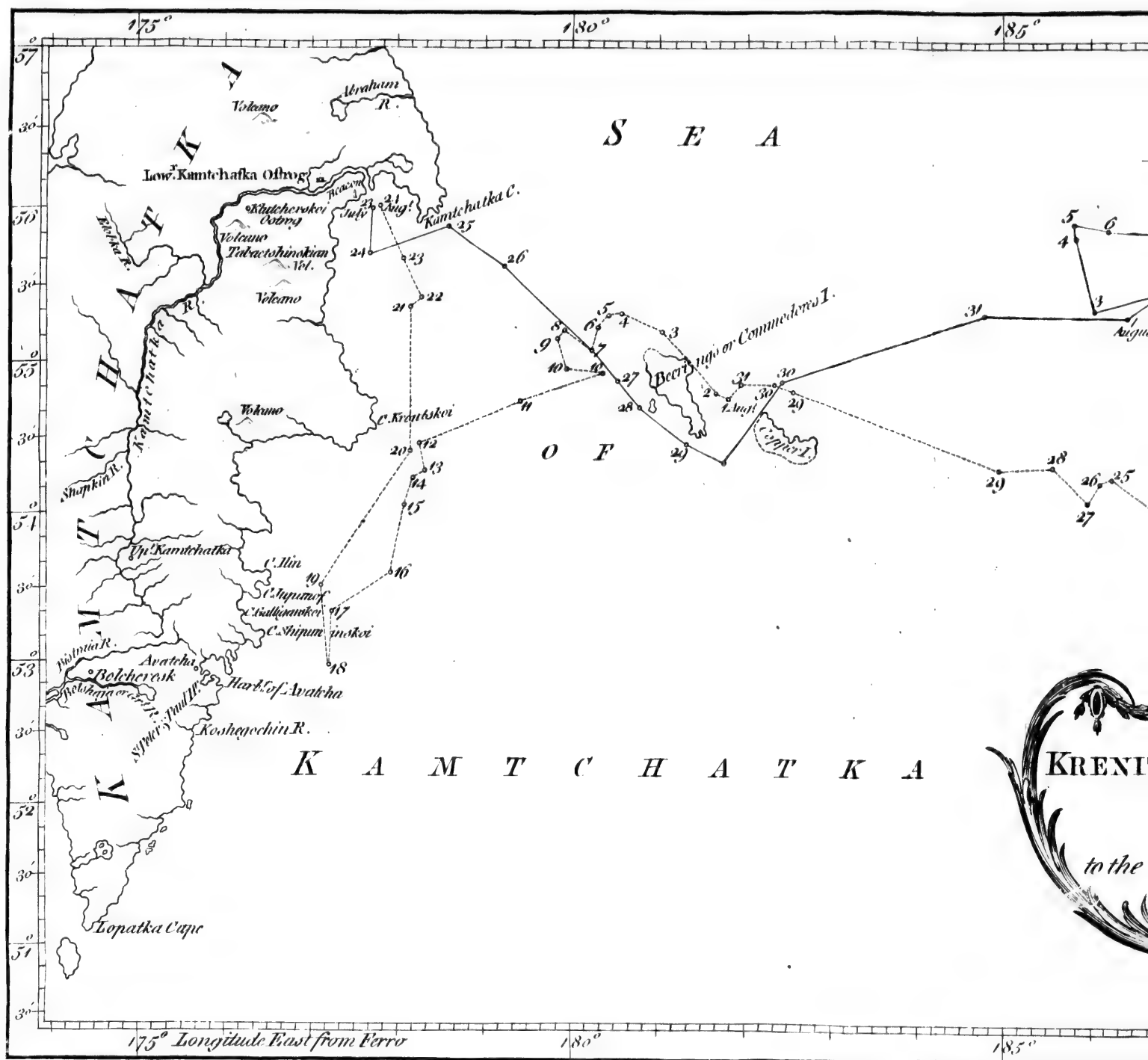
The preceding Voyages of which an Account has been given in this second Part, were made by private Merchants; but we now submit to the Reader an Extract from the Journal of Krenitzin's and Levashef's Voyage to the Fox Islands, undertaken by Order of Catherine the Second.

ON the 23d of July, 1768, Captain Krenitzin sailed in the galliot St. Catherine, and Lieutenant Levashef in the hooker St. Paul, from the mouth of the Kamtchatka river towards America. Their instructions were regulated by information derived from Beering's expedition in 1741. Shaping their course accordingly, they found themselves more to the north than they expected; and were told by the Russian traders and hunters that a similar * mistake was committed in the chart of that expedition.

* This passage is obscurely expressed. Its meaning may be ascertained by comparing Krenitzin's chart with that of Beering's voyage prefixed to Muller's account of the Russian Discoveries. The route of Krenitzin's vessel was considerably to the north of the course held by Beering and Tchirikof, and consequently he sailed through the middle of what they had supposed to be a continent, and which he found to be an open sea.

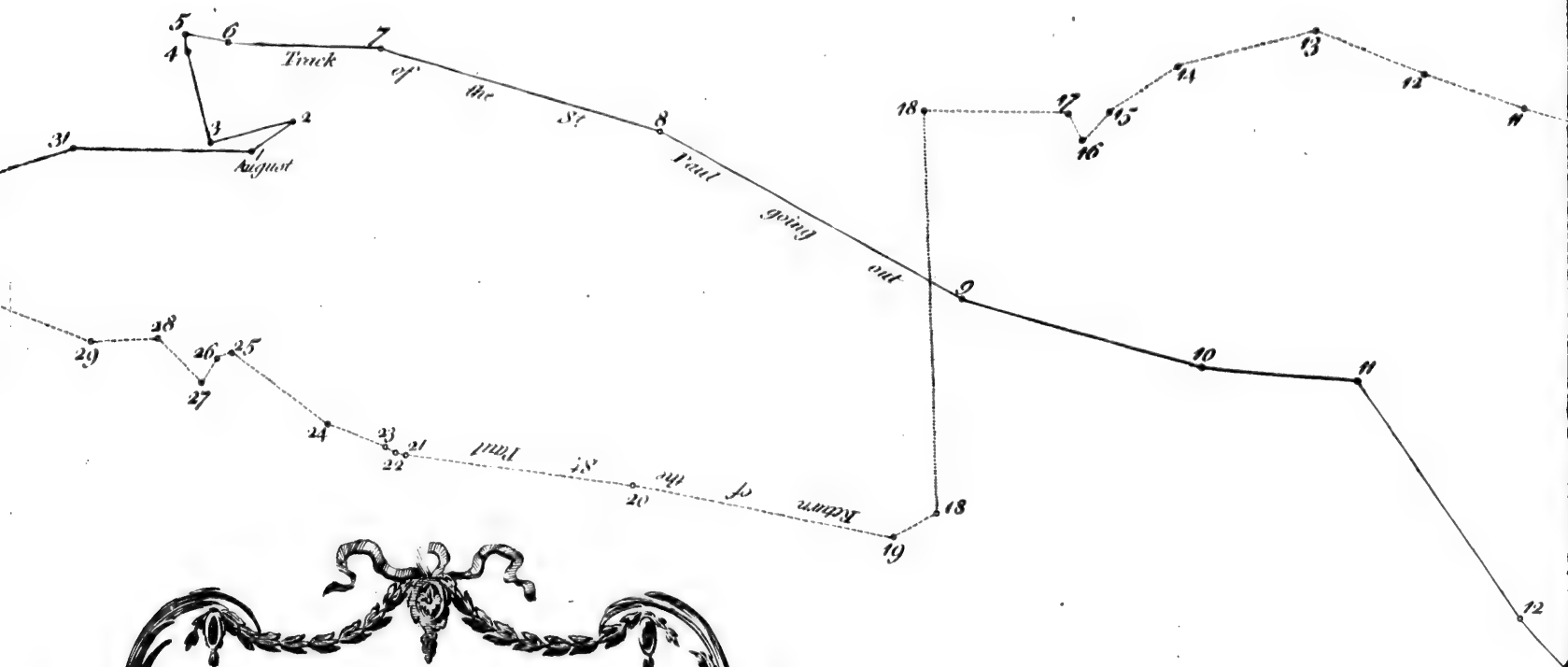
These





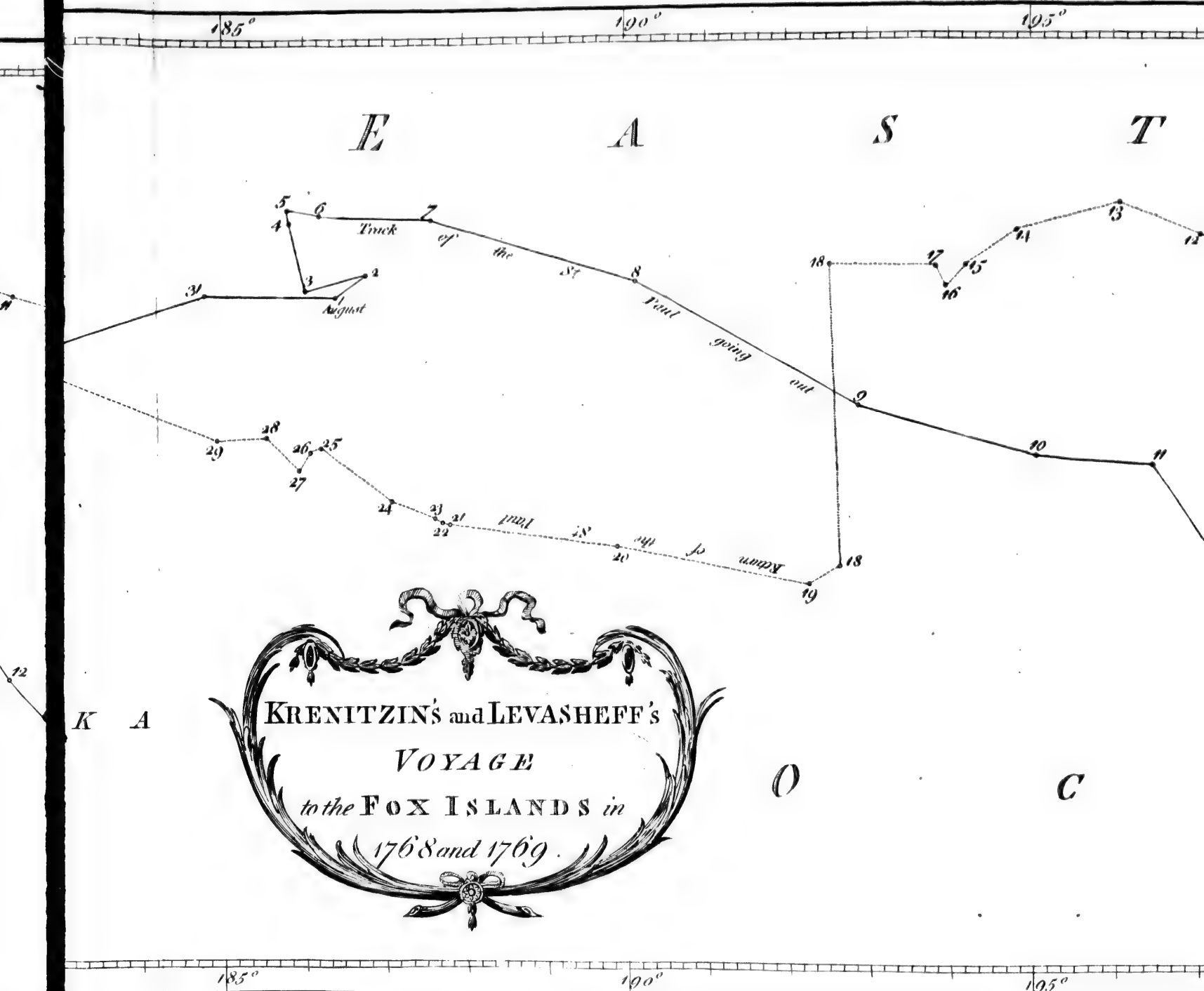
185° 190° 195°

E A S T

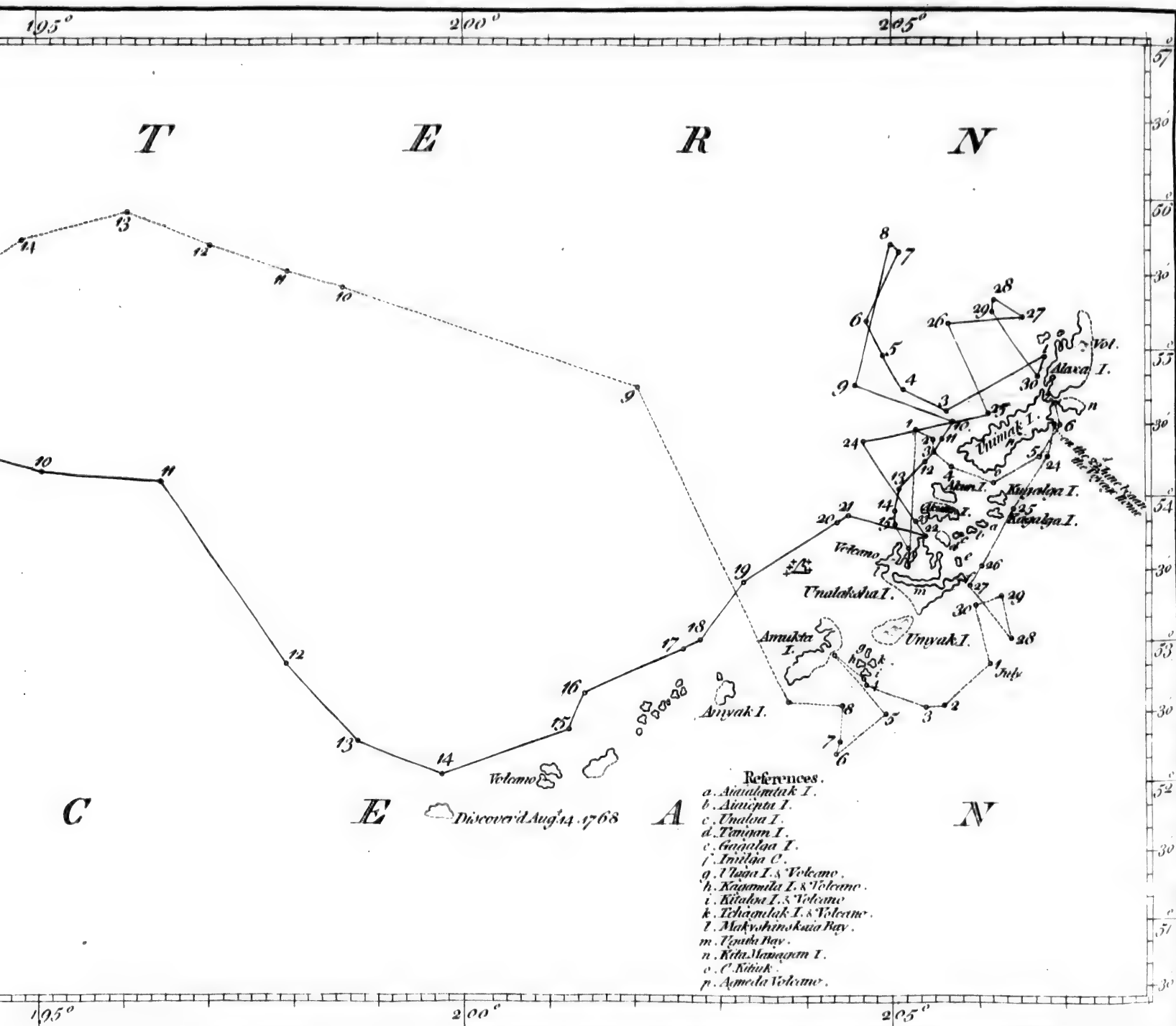


185° 190° 195°

published April 13th 1780 according to Act of Parliam^t. by T. Cadell in the Strand.



published April 13th 1780 according to Act of Parliam^t by T. Cadell in the Strand.



These traders observed that the distant islands were situated much more to the south, and farther east than was imagined. On the 27th they saw Commodore's or Beering's Island, which is low and rocky, especially on the S. W. On this side they observed a small harbour, distinguished by two hillocks like boats, and not far distant found a fresh-water lake.

To the S. E. lies another island, called by the Russians Mednoi Ostrof, or Copper Island, from a great quantity of copper found on its N. E. coast, the only side which is known to the Russians. It is washed up by the sea, and covers the shore in such abundance, as to furnish a freight for many ships. Perhaps an India trader might make a profitable voyage from thence to China, where this metal is in high demand. This copper is mostly in a metallic or malleable state, and many pieces seem as if they had been in fusion. The island is not high, but has many hillocks, each of which appears like the crater of a volcano. We may here in general observe, that all the islands represented in the chart prefixed to this journal abound with such craters, called in Russian *Sopka*; no island, however small, was found without one, and many consisted of nothing else*. All these islands are subject to violent and frequent earthquakes, and abound in sulphur. The writer of the journal was not able to ascertain whether any lava was found upon them; but speaks of a party-coloured stone as heavy as iron. From this account it is by no means improbable that the copper has been melted in some eruption.

* The chain of islands here laid down, may without any violent stretch of imagination, be considered as thrown up by some late volcanos. The apparent novelty of every thing seems to justify this conjecture: nor can any objection be derived from the vegetable productions; for the summer after the lower district of Zutphen in Holland was gained from the sea, it was covered with wild mustard.

After

After leaving Copper Island, no land was seen from either of the ships (which had parted company in a fog) till, on the S. E. quarter of their track was discovered the chain of islands or headlands laid down in the chart. These in general appeared low, the shore dangerous, without creeks, and the intermediate straits very shallow. During their course outwards, as well as during their return, they had frequent fogs, and it appears from the journal, as well as from the relation of the hunters, that even during summer clear weather for five days together, was an uncommon circumstance.

The St. Catherine wintered in the Straits of Alaxa, and was drawn into shoal water. The instructions set forth, that a private ship had in 1762 found there a commodious haven; but the Captain looked for it in vain. The entrance of this strait from the N. E. was extremely difficult on account of flats, and strong currents both at flood and ebb: the entrance however from the S. E. was afterwards found to be much easier, with not less than five fathoms and a half water. On surveying this strait and the coast of Alaxa, many craters were observed in the low grounds close to the shore, and the soil produced few plants. May not this allow the conjecture that the coast had undergone considerable changes even since the year 1762. Few of the islands produce wood, and only in the vallies near rivulets. Unalga and Alaxa contain the most, they abound also with fresh-water streams, and even rivers; from which we may infer that they are extensive. The soil is usually boggy, and covered with moss; but Alaxa has greater depth of earth, and produces much grass.

The St. Paul wintered in Unalashka in $53^{\circ}. 19'$ north latitude; and the computed longitude from the mouth of Kamtschatka river, was $27^{\circ}. 5'$.

C c

east.

east *. Unalashka is fifty miles long from N. E. to S. W. and has on the N. E. side three bays : one called Udaga, stretches thirty miles E. N. E. and W. S. W. nearly through the middle of the island ; another, named Igunok, lying N. N. E. and S. S. W. is a tolerably good harbour, with three and a half fathom water at high-tide, and sandy bottom ; it is well sheltered from the north swell by rocks at the entrance, some of which are under water. The spring-tides rise five feet, and the shore is in general bold and rocky, except in the bay, at the mouth of a small river. There are two volcanoes on this island, one called Ayaghish, and the other by the Russians, the Roaring Mountain ; near the former is a copious hot-spring. The land is in general rocky, with loamy and clayey grounds ; but the grass is extremely coarse, and unfit for pasture. It contains scarcely any wood : the plants are the dwarf cherry († *Xylosteum* of Tournefort), whortle-berry (*Vaccinium Uliginofum* of Linnæus), raspberry, farana and shikshu of Kamchatka, and kutage, larch, white poplar, pine, and birch. The land animals are foxes of different colours, mice, and weasels ; there are also beavers ‡, sea-cats, and sea-lions, as at Kamchatka. Among their fish we may reckon cod, perch, pilchards, smelts, roach, needle-fish, terpugh, and tchavitcha. The birds are eagles, partridges, ducks, teals, urili, ari, and gadi. The animals, of whose Russian names I can find no interpretation (excepting the Ari) are described in

* According to the general map of Russia, the mouth of the Kamchatka river is $178^{\circ}. 23'$. from Ferro. Unalashka therefore, according to this estimation, is $203^{\circ}. 30'$. from Ferro, or $187^{\circ}. 55'. 15''$. from Greenwich.

† The *Lonicera Pyrenaica* of Linnæus. It is not a dwarf cherry, but a species of honey-suckle.

‡ By beavers the journalists certainly mean sea-otters, called by the Russians, sea-beavers.

Krahninikoff's History of Kamichatka, or in Steller's relation contained in the second volume of the Memoirs of the Academy of St. Petersburg.

The inhabitants of Alaxa, Umnak, Unalafsha, and the neighbouring islands, are of a middle stature, tawny brown colour, with black hair. In summer they wear coats (*parki* *) made of bird skins, over which, in bad weather, and in their boats, they throw cloaks, called *kamli*, of the intestines of whales. They wear wooden caps, ornamented with beads of different colours, little figures of bone or stone, ducks' feathers, and the ears of the animal called *Scivutcha* or sea-lion. In the gristle of the nose they place a bone, four inches long, or the stalk of a certain black plant, from the ends of which they hang strings of beads in fine weather and on festivals. They thrust beads and bits of pebble cut like teeth, into holes made in the under lips, and wear strings of beads in their ears, with bits of amber, which the inhabitants of the other islands procure from Alaxa, in exchange for arrows and *kamli*. They cut their hair just above the eyes, and some shave the crown of their heads like monks; behind, the hair is loose. The dress of the women scarcely differs from that of the men, excepting that it is made with fish-skins. They sew with bone needles, and thread of fish guts, fastening their work to the ground before them with bodkins. They go bare-headed; the hair cut like that of the men before, but tied up behind in a high knot. They paint their cheeks with strokes of blue and red, wear nose-pins and ear-rings like the men, hang beads round their necks, and chequered strings round their arms and legs.

* *Parki*, in Russian, signifies a shirt: the coats of these islanders being made like shirts, or rather like our smock frocks.

In their persons they are extremely nasty; they eat the vermin with which their bodies are covered, and swallow the mucus from the nose. Having washed themselves, according to custom, first with urine and then with water, they suck their hands dry. When sick they lie three or four days without food; and if bleeding is necessary, open a vein with flint lancets, and suck the blood.

Their principal nourishment is fish and whale fat, which they commonly eat raw. They also feed on sea-wrack and roots, particularly the *saran*, a species of lilly; they eat an herb called *kutage*, on account of its bitterness, only with fish or fat. They sometimes kindle fire bycatching a spark among dry leaves and powder of sulphur; but the most common method is by rubbing two pieces of wood together, in the manner practised at Kamtchatka*, and which Waxel, Beering's lieutenant, found in use in that part of North America which he saw in 1741. They are fond of Russian oil and butter, but not of bread. They could not be prevailed upon to taste sugar until the commander shewed the example; but finding it sweet, they carried it home to their wives.¹

Their huts are built precisely in the manner of those in Kamtchatka, with the entry through the middle of the roof. In each live several families, to the amount of thirty or forty persons. They keep themselves warm by means

* The instrument made use of by the Kamtchadals, to procure fire, is a board with several holes, and a stick; the latter is put into the holes, and turned about swiftly, until the wood within the holes begins to burn, and the sparks fall upon the tinder.

of whale fat burnt in shells, which they place between their legs. The women sit apart from the men.

Six or seven of these huts or yourts make a village, of which there are sixteen in Unalashka. The islands seem in general to be well inhabited, as may be conjectured from the great number of boats continually plying along the shore. There are upwards of a thousand inhabitants on Unalashka, and they say that it was formerly much more populous. They have suffered greatly by their disputes with the Russians, and by a famine in the year 1762; but most of all from a change in their way of life. No longer contented with their original simplicity, they long for Russian luxuries; in order therefore to obtain a few delicacies, which are presently consumed, they dedicate the greater part of their time to hunting, for the purpose of procuring furs, by which they neglect laying up a provision of fish and roots, and their children frequently die of hunger.

Their principal food is fish, which they catch with bone hooks. Their boats, in which they row to a great distance from land, are made like those of the Innuit or Esquimaux, of thin slips of wood and skins; these skins cover the top as well as the sides of the boat, and are drawn tight round the waist of the rower; the oar is a paddle, broad at both ends. Some boats hold two persons, one of whom rows, and the other fishes, but these seem appropriated to the chiefs. They have also large boats capable of holding forty persons. They kill birds and beasts with darts made of bone, or of wood tipped with sharpened stone; they use these kind of darts in war, which break with the blow and leave the point in the wound.

In

In manners and character these people are extremely rude and savage. The inhabitants of Unalashka, however, are less barbarous in their behaviour to each other, and more civil to strangers, than the natives of the other islands; but even they are engaged in frequent and bloody quarrels, and commit murder without the least compunction. Their disposition involves them in continual wars, in which they always endeavour to gain their point by stratagem. The inhabitants of Unimak are formidable to all the rest; they frequently invade the other islands, and carry off women, the chief object of their incursions. Alaxa is much subject to these depredations, probably because it is more populous and extensive. They all agree in hating the Russians, whom they consider as general invaders. The people of Unalashka however are more friendly; for Lieutenant Levashef, hearing of a Russian vessel in the straits of Alaxa, prevailed on some natives to carry a letter, which they undertook, notwithstanding the danger they were exposed to from the inhabitants of the intervening islands.

The journalist says, these islanders have no religion, nor any notion of a God, yet we observe among them sufficient marks of such religion as might be expected from their situation. They employ fortune-tellers at their festivals, who pretend to foretell events by the information of the kugans or demons. In their divinations they put on wooden masks, made in the form in which, they say, the kugan appeared to them; they then dance with violent motions, at the same time beating drums covered with the bladder of the katchi. The inhabitants wear little figures on their caps, and place others round their hats, to keep off devils: these are sufficient marks of a savage religion.

It is common to have two, three, or four wives, who do not all live together, but like the Kamtchadals, in different yourts. Nor is it unusual for the men to exchange their wives, and even sell them in time of dearth, for a bladder of fat. The husband afterwards endeavours to get back his wife, if she was a favourite, and sometimes kills himself, if unsuccessful. When strangers arrive at a village, the women usually meet them, while the men remain at home; this is considered as a pledge of friendship and security. When a man dies in the hut belonging to his wife, she retires into a dark hole for forty days; the husband pays the same compliment to his favourite wife on her death. When both parents die the children are left to shift for themselves. The Russians found many in this situation, and some were brought for sale.

In each village is a sort of chief called Tookoo*; who decides differences by arbitration, and the neighbours enforce the sentence. When he embarks at sea he is exempt from labour, and has a servant called *kali*, for the purpose of rowing the canoe: this is the only mark of his dignity; at other times he works like the rest. The office is not hereditary; but is generally conferred on him who is most remarkable for his personal qualities; or who possesses a great influence by the number of his friends. Hence the person who has the largest family is generally chosen.

During their festivals, which are held at the conclusion of the fishing season in April, the men and women sing; the women dance sometimes singly, and sometimes in pairs, waving in their hands blown bladders; they begin with gentle movements, which become at last extremely violent.

* This is probably a mistake for Toigon.

The inhabitants of Unalashka are called Kogholaghi; those of Akutan, and further east to Unimak, Kighigufi; and those of Unimak and Alava, Katag-hayekiki. They cannot tell the meaning of these appellations, and now begin to call themselves by the general name of Aleyut, given to them by the Russians, and borrowed from some of the * Kuril Islands. Being asked concerning their origin, they said that they had always inhabited these islands, and knew nothing of any country beyond them. All that could be gathered from them was, the greater number are supposed to come from Alaxa, and they did not know whether that land had any bounds. The Russians surveyed this island very far to the N. E. in boats, and set up a cross at the end of their survey. Though the boats of the islanders are like those of the Americans, it appears from their customs and way of life, and by their situation, that they are of Kamtschadal original. Their huts, manner of kindling fire, and other circumstances, confirm this conjecture: add to this, the almost continual westerly winds which must render the passage westward extremely difficult. Beering and Tchirikoff could never meet with easterly winds but by steering southward.

The Russians have been accustomed to visit these islands in quest of furs, of which they have imposed a tax on the inhabitants. The manner of carrying on this trade is as follows: They proceed in autumn to Beering's and Copper Island, and there winter; they then employ themselves in catching the sea-cat, and afterwards the scivutcha, or sea-lion; the flesh of which is prepared for food, and esteemed a delicacy; they carry the skins of these sea-animals to the

• I cannot find, that any of the Kuril Isles are called Aleyut in the catalogue of those islands given by Mr. Muller, S. R. G. III. p. 86—92. Neither are any of them laid down under that name in the Russian charts.

easterly

eastern islands. The following summer they sail eastward, to the Fox Islands, and again lay their ships up for the winter. They then endeavour to procure, either by persuasion or force, the children of the inhabitants, particularly of the Tookoos, as hostages. This being accomplished, they deliver to the inhabitants fox-traps, and skins for their boats, for which in return they expect furs and provisions during the winter. After obtaining a certain quantity of furs, for which they give quittances, the Russians pay for the rest in beads, goats-wool, copper-kettles, hatchets, &c. In spring they receive their traps, and deliver up their hostages. They dare not hunt alone, nor in small numbers, on account of the hatred of the natives. These people could not, for some time, comprehend for what purpose the Russians imposed a tribute of skins, which were not to be their own property, but belonged to an absent person; for their Tookoos have no revenue. Nor could they be convinced that there were any more Russians than those who came among them; for in their own country all the men of an island go out together. At present they comprehend something of Kamtchatka, by means of the Kamtchadals and Koriacs who accompany the Russians; and who on their arrival love to associate with people whose manner of life resembles their own.

Krenitzin and Levashef returned into the mouth of Kamtchatka river in autumn, 1769.

The chart which accompanies this journal was compiled by the pilot Jacob Yakof, under the inspection of the commanders * Krenitzin and Levashef.

* Krenitzin was drowned soon after his return to Kamtchatka, in a canoe belonging to the natives.

The track of the St. Paul is marked both in going out and returning. The harbour of St. Paul in the island of Unalashka, and the straits of Alaxa, are laid down from observations made in the winter of 1768; and the islands connected by bearings and distances taken during a cruise of the St. Paul twice repeated.

In this chart the variation is said to be

In Lat.		Long.	Points.
54° 40'	————	204 ————	2 East.
52 20	————	201 ————	1½
52 50	————	198 ————	1½
53 20	————	192 30 ————	1
53 40	————	188 ————	1
54 50	————	182 30 ————	¾
55 00	————	180 30 ————	¾

But the arrows in the compass imply that the variation is *Wet*; probably the mistake is in the arrows.

E A S T E R N *O C E A N*

CHAP. 15.

Voyage of Lieutenant Synd, to the North-East of Siberia—He discovers a Cluster of Islands, and a Promontory, which he supposes to belong to the Continent of America, lying near the Coast of the Tchutshi.

We conclude this Period with a Sketch of an Expedition which, though prior to the last, can scarcely be comprehended in the chronological Series of the Russian Discoveries.

IN 1764 Lieutenant Synd sailed from Okotsk, on a voyage of discovery towards the continent of America, and was ordered to take a different course from that held by the late Russian vessels, which lay due east from Kamtschatka. As he steered therefore his course more to the north-east than any of the preceding navigators; and as it appears from all the voyages related in the preceding part of this work, that the vicinity of America was to be sought for in that quarter, even the scanty account which I was able to obtain of this expedition cannot be deemed uninteresting.

In 1764 Synd put to sea from the port of Okotsk, but did not pass between the southern cape of Kamtschatka and Shushu, the first Kuril Isle, before 1766. He then steered north, at no great distance from the coast of the peninsula, but made little progress that year; for he wintered south of the river Uka.



The following year he sailed from Ukinski Point due east and north-east, until he fell in with a cluster of islands * stretching between 61 and 62° of latitude, and 195 and 202° longitude; and lying south-east and east of the coast of the Tchutski, several of which are situated very near the shore. Besides these small islands, he discovered a mountainous coast lying within one degree of the country of the Tchutski, between 64 and 66° north latitude; its western extremity extended to longitude $38^{\circ} 15'$ from Okotsk, or $199^{\circ} 1'$ from Fero. This land is laid down in his chart as part of the continent of America; but we cannot determine upon what proofs he grounds this representation, until a more circumstantial account of his voyage is communicated to the public. Synd seems to have made but a short stay a-shore. Instead of endeavouring to survey the coasts, or steer more to the eastward, he instantly shaped his course due west towards the land of the Tchutski, then turned directly south and south-west, until he came opposite to Katyrskoi Nofs, from which point he coasted the peninsula of Kamchatka, doubled the cape, and reached Okotsk in 1768.

* These are certainly some of the islands which the Tchutski resort to in their way to the continent of America; and their intelligence has been proved to be correct, by Cook's Voyage of Discovery.

ACCOUNT
OF THE
RUSSIAN DISCOVERIES.

PERIOD III.

From 1778 to the Termination of the Voyage of Billings in 1792.



INTRODUCTION.

HITHERTO we have confined ourselves to the voyages of the Russians, without reference to that of any other nation, in order to give the reader an idea of the nature and extent of their discoveries, before the voyage of Cook. Before that æra every thing was uncertain and confused, and though the Russians had undoubtedly reached the continent of America, yet they had not ascertained the line of coast, nor the separation or vicinity of the two continents of Asia and America.

The solution of this important problem was reserved for our great navigator; and every Englishman must exult that the discoveries of Cook were extended

extended further in a single expedition, and at the distance of nearly half the globe, than the Russians accomplished in a long series of years, and in a region contiguous to their own empire. He traced the eastern part of the coast of Asia as high as latitude 68°, ascertained the separation and vicinity of the two continents, and the principal points of the coast of America, as high as latitude 71°.

The Russians availed themselves of his discoveries, and their subsequent expeditions were made with greater confidence, and pushed to a more considerable distance. Many of the distant islands were explored and colonized; and settlements formed on the north-west coast of America.

The most interesting of their expeditions were two made by Shelekof, who formed settlements on the Isle of Kadiak and on the coast of America; and his narrative, which was originally published in German by Pallas, is here added, with a view to exhibit the progress of the Russian discoveries.

CHAP. 1.

Narrative of Shelekov's Voyage to Kadiak.

From 1783 to 1787.

Sails from Okotsk to Kadiak—Attacked by the Konaghi—Succeeds in terrifying them by the Effects of Fire-arms—Forms a Settlement—Other Engagements with the Natives—Conciliates their Affection—The Party afflicted by the Scurvy—Expeditions to the neighbouring Islands, and the Coast of America—Description of the Climate—Returns—Destination of the two Vessels during his Absence—Reaches Bolcherretsk—Arrival of an English Ship in the Port of St. Peter and St. Paul—Proceeds to Irkutsk—General Account of the Inhabitants and Productions of the Islands, and of the American Coasts.

IN 1783 I constructed for our company in the harbour of Okotsk, three galliots, of which the first was called the Three Holy Fathers, the second St. Simeon and the Prophetess Anna, and the third the St. Michael *.

On the 16th of August the three vessels, having on board one hundred and ninety-two men, took their departure from the mouth of the river Ural, which falls into the sea of Okotsk, for the Eastern Ocean. I sailed in the first galliot, accompanied by my wife, who for my sake submitted to all the

* The St. Michael carried sixty-two men.

fatigues

fatigues of the voyage. In case of separation I fixed on Beering's Island as the place of rendezvous.

After landing on the first Kuril Island, and providing ourselves with water, we continued our course, and on the 12th of September the three galliots were separated from each other in a violent storm. Being again joined by the St. Simeon, we proceeded to Beering's Island, where we passed the winter.

On the 16th of June, 1784, we took our departure, and agreed, in case of separation, to meet at Unalashka, one of the Fox Islands.

On the 19th, in a thick fog, we lost sight of the St. Simeon, and on the 20th reached Copper Island alone; from whence, after taking a supply of water and providing ourselves with the flesh of sea-bears, we sailed on the 23d. On the 6th of July we passed the Isle of Akta, one of the Andreanofki Isles, and on the 7th, Amlia. On the 8th and 9th we came in view of Siugam, Amuſſa, and the Four Mountains (Tſchetyre Sopotschnu). On the 10th we sailed between them, and steered northward. On the 12th, being joined by the St. Simeon, we reached on the 13th the Bay of Natukink, in the island Unalashka, and on the 14th entered the Captain's harbour, and there fastened the galliots to the shore. Here we continued until the 22d providing ourselves with water and provisions. As we sailed by Unalashka we could not avoid remarking that the whole chain of the Aleutian Islands from Beering's Island to Kucktak * (of which I shall hereafter speak) consists

* By Kucktak, Shelekoſ means Kadiack, or Kodiak. Kucktak, in the language of the natives, signifies an island; and Shelekoſ mistook that term for the name of the island. See Sauer, p. 174.

of high rocky mountains, among which are several volcanoes. They contain no timber trees; but some small willows and alders, and these only in particular places. The natives use drift-wood for fire and building.

Having procured two interpreters, and ten natives, who willingly accompanied us, we took our departure on the 22d, after leaving a notice for the St. Michael to proceed to Kucktak, which is also called Kadyak, as the place of our general rendezvous. We pursued our course through the strait which separates Unimak and Akun from the northern to the southern side of the Fox Islands. This strait is free from rocks and shoals, but during the ebb and flow the current is extremely rapid.

On the 3d of August we anchored in a bay on the south side of Kucktak, and on the 4th dispatched some of the crew in several baidars to reconnoitre the island. One of the parties found no inhabitants, a second observed a few, and the third brought back a native, whom I endeavoured to conciliate with presents and good words. He went away the following day, but soon returned of his own accord, and continued with us until our final departure, behaving with the strictest fidelity, accompanying us in all our expeditions, and warning us against the insidious designs of the other natives.

On the 5th three men rowed to us in three baidars; they were of a nation called Konaigi, whom we had not before known; they came on board, behaved in a friendly manner, and bartered furs for other articles. During their abode with us an eclipse took place at two in the afternoon, and continued an hour and a half; this phenomenon excited amongst them great astonishment.

On the 7th of August I sent some men in four baidars, with orders to discover the best hunting-places, and to reconnoitre the island. After rowing forty versts they observed on the 9th many savages, who were collected on a broad and precipitous rock, which on one side was low, but on the other not less than seven fathoms high.

All endeavours to conciliate these people and persuade them to receive us in a friendly manner were unsuccessful. They replied, "if you are willing to preserve your lives, retire instantly from our shores, and do not in future disturb our possessions." On receiving information of this answer, I repaired myself to the spot, in company with several of the crew, and found not less than four thousand assembled. In vain I represented to them that we came not as enemies but as friends; in vain I attempted to conciliate them, and offered them such presents as were most likely to please them; they not only rejected all my offers with disdain, but compelled me to retire by shooting at me with arrows. These circumstances filled me with uneasy reflections, and I was fully resolved to be on my guard against their hostile attempts, which they soon commenced.

On the 12th of August they came down in numerous bodies, and attacked us at midnight; but we were not unprepared to receive them. We defended ourselves with our fire-arms, and after an action of a quarter of an hour, forced them to retreat. Providentially not one amongst us was wounded, and at day-break we found they had retired to a considerable distance, having carried away all their wounded and killed.

Soon

Soon afterwards we received intelligence from an Aleütian prisoner, who had escaped from confinement, that the natives, not appalled by the ill-success of their first hostile attempts, were determined to persevere and assault us in larger bodies; that they were recently joined by numerous inhabitants from Ilinda, Ugashak, Ugatak, Tchinnigak, and other contiguous places, and resolved to pour down upon us with their united forces, to massacre all who resisted, and to reduce the others to slavery; and had agreed to divide our spoils amongst them, particularly the planks of our vessels, which they deemed highly valuable.

In consequence of this intelligence, we determined to prevent their attacks by making the first assault, before they had received more reinforcements, and by driving them from the rock on which they had established themselves, as in our vessels.

Having collected the whole crew, we proceeded with five two-pounders, and as soon as we approached, fired our muskets in the air, which as it did them no damage, had no other effect than to encourage them in their resolutions; and they assailed us with a shower of darts, which wounded, though not mortally, five of our men. I instantly ordered the cannon to be discharged; but with a view to spare bloodshed, and to strike them with greater terror, I commanded the gunners to direct their fire against the dwellings, which were scattered among the rocks. The devastation occasioned by this discharge, had its due effect; they were struck with astonishment and horror, and fled in all directions, carrying away their wounded and slain, some of whose bodies they afterwards threw into the sea. We obtained possession

of the rock without the loss of one single man; and took more than a thousand Konaghi prisoners. From these we selected above four hundred, conducted them to the harbour, and placed them under the command of one of their own chiefs, which office is called in their language, kaskak. I then supplied them with large and small baidars, nets, and other utensils; and after retaining twenty of their children as hostages, permitted them at their own desire, to remove to the distance of fifteen versts from our establishment. They afterwards behaved to us with the strictest honour and fidelity.

A large body of their countrymen having assembled with a resolution to obtain possession of the rock, and to massacre those who defended it, our new allies went out to meet them, and describing us as made wholly of fire, telling them that we shot burning arrows which overturned their rocks and dwellings, they deterred them from the attempt.

They did not however desist, for they afterwards, without the knowledge of those whom we had taken prisoners, assaulted us in the Bay of Igatak, wherein we lay with our baidars. They came at midnight in dark and stormy weather, and assailed us with spears and arrows; but after wounding six of our men, were repulsed at the first discharge of our fire-arms.

Being previously acquainted with the ferocity of these people, I was convinced that they thought it no difficult matter either to drive us from the island, or, if we made resistance, to massacre us, or reduce us to slavery, according to their custom with those whom they took in war. They grounded their expectations on our small number which did not exceed one hundred and thirty men, and on their former success in driving away,
or

or destroying the crews of several vessels who had endeavoured to establish themselves on their coast.

In 1761 they had compelled the crew of a Russian vessel which anchored before the promontory of Agaiechtalik for the purpose of wintering there, to depart from the island. In 1776, they also drove from their coast after a resistance of eleven days, a ship fitted out by Kolodilef and company, and another in 1780, under the command of Otcheridin, which attempted to winter near the promontory of Agaiechtalik, with the loss of several of the crew.

In 1783 a company of no less than three hundred men under the command of Potap Saikof, wintered in the bay of Tschugatsk *, on the coast of America, which is called by Captain Cook Sandwich Sound. They deemed their force fully sufficient to awe the natives, but in this opinion were deceived; they were so much annoyed that they could not go a vessel from their settlement unarmed, or in a small number; and at the expiration of the winter, took their departure, having lost many men by famine.

Neither these accounts, nor the solicitations of my friends could deter me from passing the winter at Kuktac; I overlooked all dangers from a sense

* It appears from the Russian charts that several bays are distinguished nearly by the appellation of Tschugatsk; first the large bay here alluded to towards the opening of Cook's Inlet, and north of Cape Elizabeth, which received no name from Cook, and is called Bay Tchougatchina; it lies between Point Bede and Anchor Point. Secondly, a bay between Cape Elizabeth and Prince William's Sound, which is called in the Russian charts the Bay of the neighbouring Tchougatz, and is probably Vancouver's Port Dickson; and thirdly, Prince William's Sound, which is described in the succeeding voyage.

of duty to my sovereign, and from concern for the interests of my employers. I determined however to take all the necessary precautions.

My first care was employed in providing for our own security, For this purpose we constructed small houses, and made a kind of fortrefs by surrounding them with high palifadoes.

Having effected this establishment, though not without much difficulty, I next directed my attention to conciliate and civilise the natives.

With a view to prevent the effusion of blood, and to prove to them that all resistance was ineffectual, I exhibited to a large body of those who visited us in a friendly manner, an experiment calculated to impress them with a sense of our superiority, and to spread the fame of what they called our burning arrows. In the midst of a large rock I bored a hole, and charged it with gun-powder, from which I laid a train concealed under another rock and carried to a considerable distance. The train being kindled, the explosion took place; and the rock was blown to pieces, in the midst of general discharge of our artillery and muskets. The astonishment of the natives was inexpressible, and the fame of our burning arrows, spread wider and wider.

I availed myself of the impressions made by this and other phenomena before unknown to them, and which were no less striking than wonderful, to alarm their fears, and conciliate their friendship. By means of my interpreters I offered them peace and amity; I convinced them that if they persevered in their hostile attempts they could not escape the effect of our fire-arms; I informed them that our gracious Empress would take them under her protection,

tection, and ensure them a life of safety and tranquillity. I described the greatness, power, tranquillity, and beauty of the Russian empire; I accompanied these offers with presents, and effectually succeeded in pacifying them.

Finding that these accounts were diffused, and excited curiosity, I seized all opportunities of repeating them. I explained to them various things and phenomena, which without previous instruction they would always have revered as divine, and thus gradually led them to acknowledge their own ignorance.

They were filled with astonishment on seeing the expedition with which we constructed our houses, because they who possessed only small iron tools, to cleave the wood and form planks, employed several years in building a hut. On observing the reverberators, which were suspended in dark nights, they believed that we had stolen the sun from heaven. I pitied their extreme ignorance, and could not suffer them to continue longer under such impressions of error, without attempting to enlighten their minds as much as lay in my power: I explained to them that the reverberator was the work of men, like themselves, and added as long as they did not live peaceably, and adopt our customs and mode of life, they would never acquire a similar degree of knowledge. I laboured to persuade them to quit their savage life, which was a perpetual scene of massacre and warfare, for a better and more happy state. I shewed them the comforts and advantages of our houses, clothes, and provisions; I explained to them the method of digging, sowing, and planting gardens, and I distributed fruit and vegetables, and some of our provisions amongst them, with which they were highly delighted.

By

By this conduct I gradually ingratiated myself in their affections; they held me in the highest veneration, called me father, and freely offered to obey my commands. Many of them brought me their children as hostages; not to mortify them I received some, and others I dismissed with presents.

I endeavoured to gain some information concerning their religion. I found that they are not idolaters; they believe in a Good and an Evil Being, and hold in regard to them such absurd opinions as are conformable to their ignorance. I endeavoured to convey to them intelligible notions of Christianity; and before my departure, converted about forty, and baptised them with as many ceremonies as a layman is permitted to employ. I soon observed that these persons conceived a higher opinion of themselves; they even decried their countrymen as their inferiors, readily adopted our manners and customs, and expressed a great curiosity to be informed of many things which struck them with astonishment.

Some of them observing with attention the picture of the Empress, and some books in which I was reading, I explained to them her goodness, power, and extent of territory. I described the happiness of those who lived under her dominion, and the wretchedness of those who disobeyed her commands, or opposed her will. I expatiated on the peace and security enjoyed by her subjects, and told them that every person might travel to a great distance without the smallest apprehension of being assaulted or pillaged. This account made such an impression on them that they entreated me to drive away all who came upon their island, and offered to place themselves under my protection, and wholly to submit to my command.

When-

Whenever they came to my dwelling and saw the obedience of my people, they believed me to be the greatest person in the world; I convinced them, however, of their mistake, informed them that I was the lowest subject of my sovereign, and that she appointed under her numerous chiefs, who took care that no one should suffer injustice or oppression. I employed every means to assure them that they would feel unspeakable happiness in being obedient to our all-gracious Empress, and would be severely punished if they resisted her.

As I frequently described the dress and accommodations of the Russians, their curiosity was so much excited that forty of both sexes requested permission to accompany us to our native country. Several also offered us their children, that they might have the happiness of seeing what their parents could not see. These persons accordingly accompanied me to Okotsk; fifteen of them came to Yakutsk; and the remainder, after receiving clothes and presents, I sent back in the trading vessels.

In regard to books, I in vain attempted to explain their use; they could never comprehend me; but were struck with still greater wonder, and comprehended me still less when I sent them with letters to our companions in different parts of the island. I regularly told them before, what they were to bring back, and when it was delivered to them, they were filled with astonishment.

I once sent a native to my factor, for some preserved plums and other dried fruit. The messenger eat half as he was returning; and when I mentioned it to him, he exclaimed, with extreme astonishment, "It is true the paper saw

F f

what

what I did, but I know how I will act another time." Willing to prove his sincerity I sent him again, and on his return taxed him with having brought a less quantity than was delivered to him. He confessed the fact; but could not conceive how I discovered it: "I buried," he said, "the paper in the sand before I eat the fruit; but I now find that the paper could see me even through the sand!"

I shall relate another instance of their extreme astonishment on observing a looking-glass in my apartment: they were greatly surprised at seeing persons resembling themselves, and as they could not discover from whence those persons came, they considered it as the effect of sorcery. In attempting to explain this phenomenon, I endeavoured to give them some notion of books, offered to teach some of their children to read, and several brought them to me for that purpose. I must, however, do these people the justice to allow that they were by no means deficient in capacity; for the children easily comprehended the instructions, and several of them before my departure spoke the Russian tongue so well, that they were understood without difficulty; and I left five-and-twenty scholars, who could read and write, and who would much rather have preferred living with the Russians than with their parents.

I then endeavoured to wean them from their ignorance; I moreover restrained the follies of my people, who were inclined to enter into disputes with the natives, and convinced them of the advantages that must result from acquiring their friendship. I also not unfrequently furnished the natives, when they went upon distant hunting parties, with letters and passports, announcing to my companions, who had established themselves in different places of the island, that the bearers were friendly and peaceable. I occasionally defended

defended them against the assaults of foreign invaders, and as their enemies henceforward desisted from attacking them, I thus procured to them the blessings of peace and security. As they experienced from this friendly intercourse that their services to me did not pass without reward, they frequently expressed a wish that I would always remain with them. I can also affirm, and not without satisfaction, that on perceiving preparations for my departure they testified the most excessive grief. At my departure I committed the care of the establishment to my factor Samoelof, a merchant of Jeniseisk, in whom I reposed full confidence, and furnished him with proper instructions.

On the best calculation, I estimated the number of the Konaghi of both sexes, who were friendly to me, and who had professed obedience to the Empress, at not less than fifty thousand. I never hinted to them the payment of any tribute; I only strived to influence them in favour of the Russians, and to habituate them as much as possible to our customs, that they might be induced not only not to oppose my countrymen in future, but to give them every assistance in their power; leaving to others the office of enforcing the Imperial decree to render them tributary, whenever time and circumstances should appear to be favourable.

In 1785 the Russians were so much afflicted with the scurvy, that during winter many of them died, and the remainder were extremely weak. The report of their situation spread abroad, and some of the distant inhabitants began to assemble in great numbers. Some of our friendly Konaghi not only informed us that they were already in march against us; but at the same time undertook without my direction to disperse them; and they succeeded so

far that they brought to me the chiefs of the enemy, who confessed their hostile intentions, and were detained as prisoners.

On the 9th of April I dispatched a Russian with a thousand friendly Konaghi, who freely offered their services, to the island of Unginsk, called by Beering the Schumagin Isles, for the purpose of protecting the Russian parties there established, to inform them of our sufferings by the scurvy, and to request speedy assistance. After their departure, however, the disorder abated.

On the 2d of May I dispatched fifty-two Russians in four baidars, eleven natives of the Fox Islands, and one hundred and ten Konaghi in small baidars, for the purpose of forming an acquaintance with the inhabitants of the islands in the bays of Kinaigsk and Ergatsk, and to explore their situation. This party returned at the end of August, and related that they had passed the summer on the northern side of the strait between the continent of America and Kuktak, and had met with no hostilities, either from the Konaghi, Kinaigi, or Tchugatski. They received from the people twenty hostages, but could not persuade them to traffic. This party, on their return to Kuktak, constructed a winter habitation, near Karluta, a populous district, and made in baidars several expeditions to the northern and western shores of the island, as well as to the American coasts from Yukac-Mac as far as the bay of Kamyshtsk *, and by means of winning behaviour, hospitality, and presents, conciliated the friendship of the natives, procured hostages, and trafficked with them, without the smallest disagreement.

* Called by Vancouver Bourdieu's Bay.

During

During winter I also sent different parties to explore the southern and western coasts of Kuktak, and the neighbouring islands. Large numbers of Konaghi were allured to trade with us, and to deliver hostages; and we encouraged them in their good-will and submission to the Russian power. At the end of December, I dispatched an interpreter and two Russians to explore and trade in the Bay of Kinaigisk, and entrusted them with conducting the hostage Askac from the island Schuyeck.

1786.—On the 10th of January I sent eleven Russians to the eastern side of Kuktak, towards a forest of fir near Kinnaigisk, about one hundred and sixty versts from our harbour, for the purpose of building floops. Having first constructed a winter hut, they executed their commission, obtained some furs, and returned on the 15th of May.

On the 25th of February, I received information by letter, dated at Katmansk the 19th, from the Greek Delarof, that the galliot St. Michael, had, in consequence of my notice, left Unalashka, put to sea on the 12th of May, 1785, but had been detained in those parts near six weeks by contrary winds, and after twice repairing, and twice losing her mast, was compelled to return and winter on Unalashka; that on receiving information of our sufferings, by the scurvy, thirty men were dispatched in baidars to our assistance, but in their passage they were driven on the coast of America, lost six men by hunger and cold; and after their return five more perished.

March 7. As I was now disposing all things for my departure, for the further prosecution of the discoveries which were not completed the foregoing

going year, I sent five Russians to build a fortress at Cape St. Elias, with a view as well to assist them in this undertaking as to conciliate the inhabitants of the districts stretching from that point to the 47th degree of latitude, I dispatched with them a thousand men, consisting of Konaghi natives of Kuktak, and other islands, together with seventy inhabitants of the Fox Islands, to raise crosses on the coasts, and to bury in the earth pot-herds, the bark of birch tree, and coals*. These persons sent towards the end of March two Tchinigacks with information that the Toion of Schuyeck had revolted, and murdered the interpreter, and the two Russians whom I sent to explore the bay of Kinaigik. They also requested assistance to oppose the revolted Kinaigi who had come from the American coast, near Schuyeck, and consisted of about a thousand men. On this intelligence I instantly dispatched two parties; the first of thirty Russians with a leader, the second of Konaghi and Aleutians, who voluntarily offered their services, under a separate chief. I ordered them to land in some harbour of the Island Afognak, which is opposite Schuyeck, and construct a fortress according to a plan which I delivered to them.

On the 19th of May I received information by a boat, that on the junction of our forces the hostile intentions of the Kinaighi were frustrated. The Russians soon afterwards constructed a fortress on the island Afognak, and another according to my direction in the bay of Kinaigik; meanwhile those who had failed to Cape St. Elias began their work, and left a party to finish the fort, which I ordered to be constructed in that place.

* This probably is the ceremony used amongst the Russians in taking possession of newly-discovered countries.

The Island of Afagnak, the opposite coast of America, as well as Kuktak, have the best harbours. The soil is fruitful, there are abundance of fowls and fish, the meadows are covered with pasture, and wood for building houses and ships found in sufficient quantities at Schuyeck and on the neighbouring coast.

During this year the natives of America and of the neighbouring islands flocked to our parties in greater numbers than in the preceding year; and we omitted no opportunity of endeavouring to convince them of our friendly intentions.

The most violent winds were northerly and westerly; they seldom blow from the east, and scarcely ever from the south, during the whole winter. It rained little in winter, but snowed frequently, and in those places where the wind had no power, the snow rose to the height of more than an arshine, but wherever the operation of the wind could take effect, did not long continue.

On the 22d of May I put to sea in the galliot of the Three Fathers, and was accompanied by the Toions of America, Kuktak, and of the other islands, and by the Chiefs of the Konaghi. In this situation I saw the third galliot, the St. Michael, sailing towards the harbour. I immediately went on board, and having exchanged the masters of the two ships, dispatched her to the harbour, which I had just quitted, with a note to the leader of the party sent to the islands of Schuyek and Afagnak, injoining him on his return in the St. Michael, to direct his course to the bay near the fortrefs of Afagnak.

I shall

I shall here give an account of the destination which I fixed for the two galliots that remained in these parts. One of them by my instructions to the factor Somoilof was ordered to cruise in the new discovered ocean, from the 60th to the 71st degree of longitude, estimated from the first meridian of Okotsk, and from the 60th to the 40th degree of north latitude. The other was commanded to sail to the north, where the two continents approach each other, for the purpose of discovering unknown countries and islands. The third, in which I sailed from Kuktak, was converted into a transport ship, for the purpose of annually communicating to government an account of the discoveries; a duty which I cheerfully imposed upon myself.

Having made this disposition, Schelekof sailed homewards, fell in with a chain of islands, the Four Mountains, and Amukta, with its volcano in the crisis of a violent eruption. He then tacked, came in sight of Singam, Amlia, Atcha, and the Andreanoffkie Islands; and on the 30th of July, anchored before the first of the Kurile Islands. On the 7th of August he ran up the Bolchaia Reka, and on the 15th arrived at Bolcherrefk. Having purchased three horses for two hundred roubles, he purposed riding along the coast to Okotsk; but receiving information that an English ship had anchored in the harbour of Avatcha, and intended continuing there twenty days for the purpose of trading, he postponed his journey to Okotsk, and proceeded on horseback to the town of St. Peter and St. Paul. He thus continues his journal:

On my arrival the captain of the ship, in company with two officers, paid me a visit, conveyed me on board their vessel, and shewed their merchandise. The captain, whose name was William Peters, informed me that

that he had letters from the East India Company to the commander of Kamtchatka, requesting permission to traffic in these parts.

According to his own account he sailed from Bengal on the 20th of March, reached Malacca on the 16th of April, and Canton on the 28th of July, and on the 9th of August anchored in the harbour of Avatcha. The vessel was a brig, copper-bottomed, carrying twelve guns, and seventy men. After obtaining permission from Baron Stengel, governor of Kamtchatka, and settling the duties, and the price of the goods; I purchased commodities of them to the amount of six thousand, six hundred and eleven roubles.

On the 3d of September, I sailed with my merchandize, out of the harbour in boats, and on the 8th arrived at Bolcherreffk, where I sold my purchase with a profit of fifty per cent.

On the 12th of September, I proceeded to the Banks of the Tigil, and came, on the 2d of October, to the fortress of Tigilsk; departed from thence on the 18th of November, in a sledge drawn by dogs, and on the 27th of January, 1787, reached Okotsk, where I found the galliot already arrived.

On the 8th of February, I departed in company with my wife, and travelling sometimes with dogs, sometimes with rein-deer, horses, and oxen, reached Yakutsk on the 11th of March, and Irkutsk on the 6th of April. During this terrible journey we underwent the most severe hardships and the greatest perils. Between the Tigil and the Iliega, we narrowly escaped an attack from the hordes of Koriacs. The north winds blew incessantly, and rendered the weather uncommonly severe. Not unfrequently in the midst

of the defarts, we were overtaken by violent hurricanes, and compelled to remain exposed to the weather, two, three, and even five days, with the rein-deer lashed to the sledge. As it was impossible to kindle a fire, we quenched our thirst with snow, and fed upon hard biscuits and dried fish. The rein-deer and dogs being benumbed with cold, and the horses sinking under their fatigue, I continued the latter part of the journey from Aldan to Irkutsk on foot.

During a short residence at Irkutsk, I drew up as circumstantial an account of my voyage and discoveries, as the time would permit, which is contained in the preceding pages; I will now describe the countries which I saw, the natives, and their customs, together with the animals and birds.

The islands lying near the American coast, and stretching from Kuktak to the east and north east, are wholly rocky and mountainous; the soil is, however, adapted to agriculture and gardening. From seeds which I sowed were produced barley, millet, pease, beans, pumpkins, parsnips, carrots, turnips, potatoes, juniper, and rhubarb. The meadows yield a large quantity of grass for hay, and in many places the weather is so mild, that cattle may be fed during the whole winter without hay. I did not observe any timber trees, but smaller trees in abundance. The ground produces succulent roots and berries of many sorts, which the natives use as food, and I observed in the central parts of Kuktak, and on the coasts of America, east of that island, five species of apples. The trees are the aloes, willow, birch, and ash; and on the islands in the American bays east of Kuktak, fir and larch. The birds are geese, ducks of various sorts, ravens, jack-daws, black æmmerlinge called Napoyki, and magpies; also sea-gulls, cranes, herons, snipes, grey and blue

blue (*Sturmvoegel*) puffins; of marine animals, sea-otters, sea-lions, seals, and whales; the river animals are otters and beavers; the quadrupeds, foxes, wolves, gluttons, linxes, bears, rein-deer, hares, ermines, sables, marmots, dormice, wild sheep, and hedge-hogs of an uncommon species; of sea-fish, we caught turbot, stock-fish, herrings; in the rivers different sorts of salmon, a peculiar sort of crabs, and others which are called by the Russians *tcharytsa*, *keta*, *naerka*, *golez*, *kaiko*, *oktopodien*.

The Konaghi are tall, strong, and healthy people; they have mostly round faces, brown complexions, and black, and sometimes, but very seldom, dark brown hair, which both men and women shave in a circular form. The wives of the chiefs, however, distinguish themselves by tufts of hair descending from the top of the head to the eye-brows. Some of them tatoo their breasts and shoulders. Both sexes wear bones, corals, and metal ornaments in the septum of the nose, in their ears, and under-lips, which they bore in such a manner as to have the appearance of two mouths. Some of the men preserve their beards.

Their dress consists of the skins of different animals and birds; they make cloaks of the intestines of seals, sea-lions, and whales, to preserve them from the rain. They wear hats of twisted grass, or of the bark of the fir-tree, and wooden caps. In hunting they employ arrows which they throw from slips of wood; in war they use lances, pointed with bone, iron, copper, or stone. They have also iron hatchets, pipes, iron and bone knives, and iron needles, which the women made till our arrival, of bone; thread formed from sinews, utensils of wood, clay, stone, and of the horns of wild rein-deer. Their baidars or boats consist of frames of wood, covered with leather instead of planks.

G g 2

They

They catch fish at sea with bone-hooks, and lines made of dried stems of seaweeds, not less than forty fathoms in length. They catch fish in the rivers with nets, and strike them with harpoons or stone lances. But in the bays and creeks they kill the salmon (roth fisch) with arrows, as they leap out of the water.

They procure fire by rubbing two pieces of wood; and instead of candles burn the fat of bears and sea animals, in stone vessels, with wicks of grass.

In regard to their marriages, I am wholly ignorant, and know as little of their new-born children, except that they give them names from the first object which presents itself, such as an animal, a bird, &c.

Their funeral rites differ in different tribes. I never saw any of their burials, and know no more than that some lay the corpse clothed in its best apparel in a small baidar, and cover it with earth; others bury with the deceased one of his slaves or prisoners alive. On the contrary, the Kinaighi burn their dead bodies with skins of animals. As a mark of sorrow for their deceased relatives and friends, they cut off their hair, and smut their faces with black paint.

They are in general healthy, not subject to many diseases, and often live to the advanced age of a hundred years. I observed, however, amongst them some traces of the venereal distemper; but no symptoms that they had ever been afflicted with the small pox.

They are remarkably prone to hospitality, and are very ceremonious
in

in receiving and treating their friends. Having coloured their faces with red paint, and put on their best apparel, they go out beating drums, and holding in their hands their instruments of war, to meet their guests, who are also fully accoutred, as if marching against the enemy. The guests no sooner approach the shore, than the host and hostess rush into the sea, as high as the breast, and draw the baidar a-shore; assist them to disembark, and bear them on their backs to the place destined for their reception. They then range their guests in order, and remain quiet until the whole party are satisfied. Having first offered cold water as a mark of respect, the young men bring in the provisions, which consist of blubber, fish pottage made of dried whales' and seals' flesh, with various sorts of berries and roots, dried fish called yukola, and the flesh of animals and birds. Salt is never used in their entertainments.

The host must first taste every thing before he offers it to the company; a proof that poison has been sometimes employed on these occasions; he then presents each dish to the guests in turn. At the close of the feast they recommence speaking, and soon afterwards, the hosts strive to amuse their visitors with various games and diversions. They put on wooden masks of singular forms, painted with various colours, and with drums beating, conduct their guests to a large building, which has the appearance of a rude and irregular temple. Here they continue night and day, beating drums, dancing, singing, and other diversions, as long as the guests remain. The performers, when fatigued, repose themselves on the floor, and after refreshing themselves with sleep, start up and recommence their pastime. When the guests retire, the diversions cease; on taking leave, both parties make presents
and

and exchanges. In these buildings, meetings, war assemblies, and conferences are held, and in all important deliberations the women are excluded.

The Konaghi and the natives of Tschugatsk speak the same tongue; but the language and manners of the Kinaighi are wholly different.

Their dwellings are made of earth: the sides boarded with planks, and the light admitted through holes in the roof, covered with the bladders and intestines of animals sewed together with sinews. The entrance is underneath; they have no fire-places, which the closeness of these habitations renders unnecessary.

They use similar huts as a kind of bathing-stove, of which they are very fond, and they warm them by means of stones brought red hot from their kitchens, which produces an intense heat without any vapour*, and then rub themselves with grass and twigs of birch.

The men have seldom more than one or two wives, and sometimes two or even three men live with one wife, without suspicion or jealousy. They are much addicted to theft, and those who are the greatest and most successful thieves, are held in the highest estimation. They make no journeys by land, and do not employ any animals for draught or carrying burthens, though they have abundance of dogs.

The inhabitants of the American coast and the contiguous islands, navigate

* In this they differ from the vapour baths of the Russians, for an account of which see Travels in Russia.

the

the bays, rivers, and lakes in baidars. With respect to the natives of the interior districts of America, I have no acquaintance with their mode of travelling, or customs. In regard to their religion, they have no notion of a deity, and although they say, that there are two beings, or rather two spirits in the world, a good and an evil one, yet they have no representation of either, and never worship them: in a word, they have no idols. Of these two beings they know nothing more, than that the good one taught them to make baidars, and the evil one to destroy and break them in pieces; hence we may estimate the narrowness of their understandings. Sorcery and divination are highly esteemed by them. They have no rules of right, and are bound by no laws, and in fact pass a life scarcely distinguished from the beasts that perish. They are extremely choleric, particularly the women; they are by nature subtle and enterprising, malicious and revengeful of injuries, although in appearance meek and gentle. On account of my short continuance amongst them, I can form no opinion of their truth and integrity. I myself experienced many instances of their fidelity and constancy, and found no less proofs of opposite qualities. They are very attentive to their own interest, and will for the sake of gain undertake any thing.

They are a lively and thoughtless people, and as they live in a constant and unbounded course of riot and carelessness, œconomy is neglected, and they are often reduced to suffer extremely from hunger and nakedness.

CHAP. 2.

Voyage of Ismaelof and Betsharoff—Touch at Kadiak—See Suklia or Montague Island—Enter Prince William's Sound—Anchor in Nutchek Bay or Port Etches—Transactions—Visited by Nekshulk Alafcha, a native Chief—Description of the Animals and Productions of the Bay of Tchugatfk, or Prince William's Sound.

The Voyage of Ismaelof and Betsharof from Kadyak to the Coast of America, the Account of which was digested by Schelekof, is by far the most interesting of any yet made by the Russians. They reached that Continent near Prince William's Sound, coasted it beyond Latitude 50°, and give a particular Description of the Aspect of the Country, and the Inhabitants and Productions. By comparing their Accounts with the Narratives of Cook, Portlock, Menres, and Vancouver, we have been able to ascertain most of the Harbours and Places at which they touched, and the general Agreement with the Accounts given by the English Navigators, proves the Accuracy of their Description.

ACCORDING to written orders from Lieutenant General Jacobi, Governor-General in Irkutsk, the Greek merchant Delatof, appointed by Schelekof, chief factor of the American company, with full powers, delivered on his arrival on the island Kadiak, where that company had a settlement, the following instructions to the pilots Ismaelof and Betsharof: They were to sail from Kadiak in the galliot called the Three Holy Fathers, along the coasts of America, as well to explore new islands and to bring the natives under the Russian dominion, as to secure to that empire the new discovered part of America, by erecting tokens, with Russian coats of arms and inscriptions.

In

In conformity with these instructions, after receiving five copper tables, and five coats of arms from Delatof, the two pilots sailed on the 30th of April, in company with forty Russians, two natives of the Fox Islands, and four Konaghi, as interpreters, provided with the necessary provisions and merchandise. From this harbour they estimated their first meridian, sailed round the island Sheledak on the south side of Kuktak (Kadiak), and approached the eastern promontory*, which is in sight of the little island Ugak.

On the 2d of May, at two P. M. we † pursued our course with a favourable wind towards the bay of Tchugatsk, but encountered on the 3d and 4th a violent storm from the east.

On the 5th we saw the island Suklia, one of the most southerly islands of the bay of Tchugatsk ‡, and the same which in the expedition of Beering, was called Cape St. Elias.

A contrary wind, blowing from the N. E., as we came on the 8th in sight of the continent, we tacked and approached the land about nine A. M., the

* Cape Greville of Cook.

† In the original, the compiler has sometimes made use of the first and sometimes of the third person plural, which occasions some obscurity. We have, therefore, thought proper to adopt the first person, as liable to less ambiguity, and more suited to the nature of a journal.

‡ The bay of Tchugatsk here means Prince William's Sound; Suklia, Montague Island; the southern promontory of which is erroneously supposed by some of the Russians to be the Cape St. Elias of Beering. The subsequent course lay through the numerous islands situated to the west of Montague Island, and round the northern point of Montague Island, to Port Etches. Tchalka is Hinchinbrook Island.

H h

wind

wind beginning to subside. Two natives came in double baidars to the galliot, and proposed to trade; but the pilots enquiring after a convenient anchoring-place, ordered out two boats, which towed the ship into a narrow strait, lying by the compass north and south. To the right was the island Chilikachlik, and to the left the continent. But on account of a rapid current, being unable to reach the harbour, we anchored at the mouth of the strait in fifteen fathoms water, and fastened the vessel to the shore.

May 9. At two o'clock, P. M., Ismaelof * went with fifteen Russians in a baidar to reconnoitre the strait, and the neighbouring coasts; while the two natives returned home. He observed several of the inhabitants; did not however go on shore, but held a conversation with them by means of his interpreter.

At five P. M. the tide flowed from the south, and the vessel, after letting her topfalls, was towed through the channel into the small harbour which we had observed to the right of the strait, near the island Chilikachlik. In seven hours we reached the bay, at the mouth of which we observed some rocks that had been covered by the tide, cast anchor in eight fathoms water, near a sandy shore; and at the same time Ismaelof joined the galliot in the baidar. Several natives came to trade, from whom we purchased twelve beaver and other skins, in exchange for beads.

On the 10th some of the crew went along the channel in boats, to discover a convenient anchoring place. After proceeding three versts, and finding

* This is the same person mentioned by Cook, vol. 2, p. 305; and by Vancouver, under the name of Smylof, book 5, chap. 6.

another

another small bay, the galliot was towed into it, and anchored in four fathoms water, on a sandy bottom. We were here accosted by two other natives, from whom we received information that a strange three-masted ship had lately arrived in these parts, and anchored near the island Tchalka in Natchek or Nutka Bay*.

On this day they buried in the earth one of the copper-plates, and erected over it a cross with an inscription, "*Russian Imperial Territory*;" and the journalist is very particular in ascertaining the situation of the place, and the bearings of different objects near it.

On the 11th we sailed by the little island, and on account of a contrary wind again cast anchor to the right, in a small bay. On the other side of the strait to the east is a harbour, where the largest ships may lie secure. We continued two days in this situation, and ascertained on the 13th the latitude of the place, by observation, to be in $50^{\circ} 67' 14''$ †, the variation $00^{\circ} 24'$, the depth of the water three fathoms and a half.

* Either the editor or Shelekov erroneously supposes this to be Nootka Sound. Whereas Natchek Bay is undoubtedly Port Etches, in Hinchinbrook Island, at the south-eastern part of Prince William's Sound. This is evident from the agreement in the latitudes which Shelekov makes $60^{\circ} 8' 50''$; Vancouver $60^{\circ} 16'$; and from his assertion that Natchek and Port Etches are the same.—Vancouver's Voyage, vol. 3, p. 169. See also a sketch of Port Etches in Portlock's Voyage, p. 226.

† Here is probably a considerable mistake in these figures, either from an error in the press, or from mis-copying the MS.; probably the latitude ought to be $59^{\circ} 47'$ for in the next page he fixes the latitude of Natchek Bay at $60^{\circ} 8' 50''$, and the lowest point of the American coast at which he touched was between 58 and 59° of latitude; the figures of the variation also are no less erroneous, as according to Portlock the variation in Port Chalmers was not less than 26° E., and Port Macleod on the western side of Montague Island 24° E. Neither of which places can be far distant from the bay mentioned in the text.

On the 14th at two P. M. we sailed with a south wind out of the strait, and steering towards a small island, which we saw before us at the distance of twenty-three versts, anchored in a bay of the island Nicachtachluk in five fathoms water, where we remained until the 17th, and traded with the inhabitants. At ten A. M. we sailed towards the northern promontory of the island Suklia, which on the 18th we approached at half after eight P. M., and on account of contrary winds cast anchor in a small bay. At ten a native, who was hunting seals, rowed towards us in a single baidar. He said he was an inhabitant of the island Tchalka, and offered to shew us a secure anchoring-place which had been frequented by foreign vessels. He assured us that there was plenty of fish in those parts, and that the boats which came into Nutchek Bay, had caught salmon and turbot in nets; and after expressing his desire to see the Russians, and their habitations, requested us to take him on board. On this information we resolved to visit the island for the purpose of fishing: we accordingly set sail at five P. M. and passing round the northern promontory of Suklia, steered with a south-east wind through the strait to the island of Tchalka. On the 19th at three P. M. we entered the bay of Nutchek, and passed into a small bay on the right, where, according to the natives, a three-masted ship had lain at anchor, and sailed only two days before our arrival*. Here the galliot anchored in four fathoms and a half on a sandy bottom. The latitude of the place was by observation, $60^{\circ}.8'.50''^{\dagger}$.

* This ship was undoubtedly the Prince William, which anchored in Port Etches, in the month of May, 1788; for a party belonging to the Iphigenia, Captain Douglas, observed in July, an inscription on a tree, "John Etches, of the Prince of Wales, May 9th, 1788, and John Hutchins." Meares, p. 316.

† See Portlock's sketch of Port Etches, which agrees in all respects with this description of Port Nutchek, while the latitude as given by the Russians answers with tolerable accuracy to that given by Cook and Vancouver.

On the 19th we commenced our fishing parties, and on the 20th the native who had desired to accompany us to Ruffia came with two of his relations, whom he left on board the ship, while he himself returned on shore. His relations then said, that though unwilling to part with him, they would not thwart his inclinations; and requested some presents for his wife and children. Accordingly on his return to the vessel, he received some beads, and other trifles, took off his garment and gave it to his relations, who carried the presents on shore, and he received from us a shirt of birds-skins, and a waistcoat of rabbit skins.

On the 21st, being apprehensive that in the situation while we lay at anchor, a north-westerly wind, which was favourable for our further progress, would render our passage out of the bay dangerous, we hove anchor at half past four P. M. and stood over to a bay on the opposite side, which we reached at nine, and anchored on the left hand, near the shore, close to the entrance towards the south, in four fathoms on a sandy ground*. On the right side of the entrance we observed some rocks; but no sand-banks. The navigation into this bay is secure for shipping, as at high tides there is seven and a half fathoms water, and never lower than three and a half. The variation is 11 hours † 48 minutes.

As the natives did not call this bay any name, it was denominated by us Constantius and Helena. On the north side is a small river, which is frequented by different sorts of salmon. At the extremity of a wood, on the

* See Brook's Harbour in Portlock's sketch of Port Etches.

† Probably a mistake for degrees.

right side of the entrance, and near a little island covered with trees, we buried in a well-wooded hillock another of the copper-plates.

On the 23d we attempted to sail for the purpose of still further exploring the American coasts; but being impeded by a south-west wind, we changed our position to the eastern side of Nutchek Bay, and anchored in sixteen fathoms water.

On the 27th at ten P. M. Nekschuk Atafcha the brother of the Toion Shenuga*, who was fifty years of age, came from a place called Tfchitick, with five other natives, and traded with us. As he appeared to be a person of good understanding, we entrusted him with one of the Russian coats of arms, and requested him to deliver it to his brother, the Toion Shenuga, who was detained at Ticheni, his place of residence, by an indisposition. In delivering to Atafcha the coat of arms, we informed him, that the sovereign of All The Russias solemnly bound herself to protect the inhabitants of these distant islands, and that the Toion must on his part wear the coat of arms on his outer garment, as a sign of his friendly intentions to the great Russian empire; and display it as well to his subjects, as to foreigners navigating in these parts, and we assured him it would prove that the Toion was under the Russian protection, and prevent all strangers from injuring him or any of his relations. Atafcha listened with great attention; received the coat of arms with extreme satisfaction, promised to execute the commission, and after remaining two hours in the galliot, returned home.

* Captain Douglas mentions a chief of the name of Shenaway, perhaps the same person—Meares's Voyage, p. 316, 317.

The bay of Tchugatsk in which these transactions happened, is very remarkable; it contains many islands and bays; the country affords fir, larch, birch, alders, and poplars. It produces many sorts of berries. The birds are eagles, cranes, geese, ducks, magpies, and crows. The wild animals are bears of different colours, hedge-hogs, black, red, and grey foxes, gluttons, martens, otters, beavers, weasels. The inland parts of the country contain according to information of the natives, wild sheep, with white skins and long white wool, which they brought on board; hares, stags, squirrels, dogs, and ermines. Like the Konaghi and others, they kill with bows and arrows whales, seals, sea-lions, sea-bears, and sea-otters. The river yields many salmon, and several other kinds of sea-fish. The natives have no laws or worship, yet whenever they make a protestation, they point to the sun, as if to call it to witness: hence they probably adore it. Their language is the same as at that of the Konaghi. They enter into alliances with the Kinaizi *, to the west, and on the east with the Ugalak natives. The people are in general crafty, subtle, and obstinate; much addicted to deceit and theft, extremely talkative, but impatient of listening to others.

* The natives of Cook's Inlet. This tribe is mentioned by Meares.

CHAP. 3.

Quit Prince William's Sound—Steer to the Island Atchaka, or Vancouver's Middleton's Island—Kill a Chief who attempted to assassinate one of the Russians—Sail to Koiack or Kaye's Island—Description—Proceed along the American Coast—Visited by the Natives—Anchor in the Bay of Yakutat, or Port Mulgrave—Description of the Dwellings, Manners, &c. of the Inhabitants—Visited by the Chief Ichack.

MAY 28, the wind falling, we hove anchor at four P. M. and were towed out of the small bay through the strait into the sea. At five hoisting sail, we discovered that the native of Tchugatsk, whom we had taken on board, was attempting to escape; but this being impossible, he mentioned a small island which he pretended was much frequented by sea-otters, and where the inhabitants of Suklia had lately hunted. In consequence of this intelligence, we steered from Tchaka, and sailed W. S. W. towards the island, with a favourable wind. Having sailed seven miles, on the 29th we reached the island which is called Atchaka*, and anchored before it about the distance of a mile; but towards eight, being apprehensive if the wind rose, lest the cable should be damaged, we began to weigh anchor. The anchor breaking, we tacked at a small distance from the island; and on the 30th at mid-day, cast

* It lies to the south-east of Montague Island, and south-west of Kaye's Island, in latitude 59° 30', and longitude 214° 30', east from Greenwich. It is laid down in Vancouver's General Chart, under the name of Middleton's island.

anchor

anchor close to the shore in thirty fathoms. Ismaelof accompanied with seventeen men, and the Tchugatfk, went in the baidar towards the shore; several inhabitants came forwards to meet them, dancing and shrieking, according to their usual custom, and on landing a traffic commenced, and several articles on both sides were exchanged. At the conclusion of the business, eight of the crew were dispatched along the shore to collect the eggs of ducks and geese, and returned after having seen several natives in four baidars, of which two, near their dwelling-place, were filled with their goods. This circumstance exciting suspicions of the islanders, all due precautions were taken. Meanwhile the man from Tchugatfk having escaped, the Toion of the place came to the ship, but gave no intelligence concerning the fugitive. On his return a baidar with six Russians was dispatched on shore. Four of them proceeding into the island for the purpose of procuring information; one whose name was Volkof, being at a distance, and the other Tchernyk, remaining in the baidar to watch, the Toion suddenly attacked him with a spear which he had concealed under his clothes, and would have killed him, had not Tchernyk evaded the stroke. Calling to his companion he defended himself for some time, when the Toion, defeated in his enterprise, assaulted Volkof, who was coming to his friend's assistance; and as he stumbled, wounded him severely in the shoulder, and struck him to the ground. Tchernyk observing the danger of his companion, fired at the Toion, who fell, but again recovering himself, continued his attack with great fury, until he was killed by a second discharge. The fugitive Tchugatfk never returned; and as we were afterwards informed, escaped with some of the natives in one of the baidars, which had been observed by our men, to the island Suklia. Volkof and Tchernyk waited till the following day in their boat

for the arrival of their four companions, and all returned to the ship, together with a native whom they had persuaded to accompany them.

There are no trees on this island; geese and other species of water-fowl flock there in great numbers; it is much frequented by seals, and sea-bears, but sea-otters never make their appearance.

On the 1st of June we set sail, and at two the next morning, came near to the island Koiac*, which lies close to the continent. It is high land; on the sea side there is a white cliff, and at the southern extremity a round and pointed rock; the southern side is white, steep, and covered with grass. The island stretches from N. to S. and its southern extremity, at the distance of half a verst, resembles a saddle. From this point to the north promontory are low hills covered with trees. We were informed by the islander who accompanied us that it was not inhabited; but was occasionally frequented by the Tchugatski, and Ugalak natives†, for the purpose of hunting sea-otters. Near its eastern side is a small island covered with grass. We doubled the southern extremity of Koiac; but did not proceed to the northern point, near which some large rocks appeared above the water, and behind them towards the coast, the small island above-mentioned‡. We

* This description exactly answers Kaye's Island. See Cook and Sauer, both of whom describe it as resembling a saddle. See also the drawing in Vancouver's Voyage, plate 13.

† These are certainly the same tribe whom Meares calls Thuglakemute-tribe, one of whom Capt. Douglas traded with, as he was sailing near Montagu and Illichinbrook Islands.—Meares, p. 317. Portlock also speaks of the Wallamute tribe.

‡ By comparing this account with Captain Puget's survey of the coast, the course followed by the Russian ship is evidently round the southern point of Kay's Island to Cape Suckling.—See Vancouver's Voyage, vol. 3, p. 216—220.

then

then steered N. E. towards the continent to a lower promontory well wooded, which is distinguished by two small islands; and having passed it again drew nearer to the coasts, which are sandy, wooded, and the distant heights covered with snow*. Five versts from shore the rusty and marshy soil appeared in the low ground as if strewn over with white sand. The coast trended N. E. and E †. We observed no convenient anchoring-places, and although the islander, whom we had taken on board, pointed out a small rivulet, which is frequented by the Ugalak natives, it had no protection from the sea. On account of a contrary wind, we steered on the ad from the coast S. E.; the wind changing in five hours, we resumed a north-easterly course. At seven A. M. the wind was still, and at eleven, we observed through the clouds, which encircled the chain of mountains on the adjacent coasts, the appearance of smoke in two places, which occasionally rose like a pillar, and again subsided.

On the third at one P. M. we stood with a south wind towards the smoke, and on approaching, found it to be a column of sand raised by a whirlwind. At three the galliot being two versts from the shore, the depth by soundings was thirty-five fathoms; at the distance of one verst, twenty-two. We now dispatched four Konaghi in baidars towards the above-mentioned rivulet, and approached the place in the galliot. The baidars passed the mouth of the rivulet, on account of shoal-water, and after observing another which appeared

* See also Vancouver, vol. 3, p. 202, 203.

† "The shore towards Cape Suckling, makes a small bend to the north-eastward; but the general direction of the coast, is nearly east and west." Vol. 3, p. 302.

to be larger, returned to the galliot at half past six. The vessel then stood towards the latter rivulet, and we cast anchor about half a verst from the shore, in five fathoms water.

Ismaelof went in the baidar with some Russian hunters to examine the mouth, which he found at ebb only half a fathom deep. This river flows between high chains of mountains, traverses a sandy soil, with which its waters are discoloured, and dividing itself into two branches falls into the sea.

The breadth of the mouths was fifty fathom, and at flood it was still wider. From the marks which it left on the trees, the height of the tide was about a fathom. They rowed up the rivulet two versts, where the depth was half a fathom, and observed recent marks of human feet, and others which resembled those of a dog. The rivulet contains flounders, salmon, and a few seals. On each side of the mouths are sandy hillocks; and the country abounded in trees, which to judge from those growing on the coasts, were larch and fir. The baidars returning to the ship at nine P. M., we soon afterwards weighed anchor, and proceeding eleven miles and a half, came on the 4th of June at eight A. M. to a bay.

After dispatching some Russians and Konaghi in four baidars to explore the country, we stood off and on, until their return. On the 5th the party came back with the intelligence that they had explored a bay, and observed marks of footsteps upon the shore. At six P. M. the galliot approached the coast, and cast anchor in twenty fathom water. At ten the next morning, the east wind blowing strongly we hove anchor, and on the 7th at nine P. M.

again

again approached the shore, and anchored in fifteen fathom water. Ismaelof with eleven Russians and three baidars, manned with Konaghi, went for the purpose of exploring the bay near the sandy shore, which was covered with firs, larch, poplars, willows, alders, and dwarf birch.

They found a river two hundred fathom broad at the mouth; to the right the shore was distinguished by small wooded islands; and the left a rocky neck of land, from which, on both sides of the banks, the river was low, sandy, and wooded.

Being prevented from ascending the river by the ice, which was just beginning to thaw, the baidars were drawn ashore, and the Russian hunters proceeding along the banks three versts, observed a hut covered with the bark of trees, and the marks of human feet; but no inhabitants. Near this river dwell the Ugalak natives, who are at enmity with the neighbouring Koliufki. They saw also traces of what seemed to be the footsteps of bears, wolves, and foxes. The river flows from the N. E. with a moderate descent; and on the right is a high ridge of mountains. They observed likewise several sea-otters, which not unfrequently swam round the ship. At four the whole party again embarked, and returned to the ship at midnight, the Konaghi bringing two young sea-otters which they had killed with their arrows.

As the ice which choked up the mouth of the river prevented us from exploring it, at ten we sailed forwards along the coast, which from the mouth of the river lies by the compass south-east, and as soon as we had cleared the bay, sailed east by south, and east south east. The shores were not high, but within land is an elevated chain of mountains; the tops of which were covered

covered with underwood. As in this part of the sea a current generally flowed, we stood off from land on the 8th, and steered between south and east. The weather being dark and gloomy, the coasts, though at the distance of no more than seventeen versts, were only visible at intervals.

After proceeding fourteen miles, we saw on the 10th at eight P. M. towards the north, a bay inclosed by mountains, to which we steered. But observing it embarrassed with small islands, and night approaching, we changed our course, and steered east and east by north. At break of day, we plied against adverse winds, and discerned the coast, which we had before seen, wholly covered with forests. At nine in the morning the wind dying away, two Russians and six Konaghi were dispatched in four baidars towards the islands, to explore the bay, and look for a river for the purpose of watering and procuring provisions; while the galliot with a light breeze stood towards the land.

At eleven the baidars returned to the ship, and were soon followed by two large wooden baidars. The sterns were much lower than the prows, which were high and pointed, and perforated with large round openings, and three smaller holes. In the middle of the baidars a pole was fixed, to the top of which sea-otter skins were fastened. Each baidar contained fifteen men, some of whom were clothed in the skins of sea-otters, fables, martins, marmots, and gluttons. Some were dressed in European cloths and linens, particularly a thin green kind of serge, and variegated printed linens*. On

* These they had probably obtained from Meares, Portlock, and other English navigators.

approach-

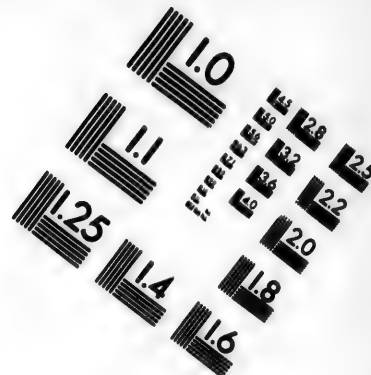
approaching the ship, they pointed to the bay which lay close to the little islands. As no one could understand their language, it was conjectured they advised us to enter the bay; a rope was accordingly thrown out, which they eagerly laid hold of, and began to tow to the vessel. For the purpose of assisting them, we hoisted out a baidar, taking the precaution to furnish the sailors with arms; in about an hour some natives came from the shore in two other baidars, and joined in towing.

By these efforts the galliot was drawn into the bay*, and from thence into a small harbour which lies on the eastern side. Here we anchored not far from the shore in ten fathoms on a sandy bottom, opposite to some habitations of the natives. But as this situation was not judged sufficiently safe, we towed the ship into an adjacent harbour smaller, but more secure, called in the language of the country Yakutat; on the 12th at four in the morning, we anchored in twelve fathoms on a muddy bottom.

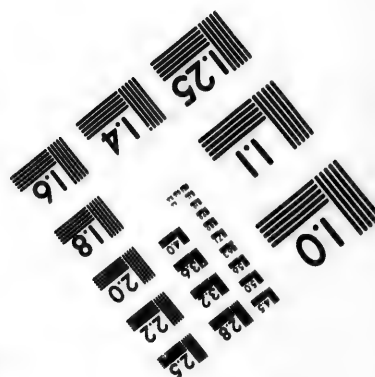
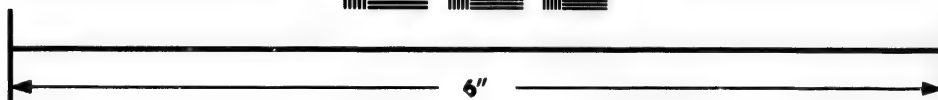
During our stay in these parts we carried on a friendly traffic with the natives. Their scattered habitations are square, the outside made of earth, and the inside of wood; the top is covered with the bark of firs, and provided with a square opening in the midst of the roof, which serves the purpose of a chimney. The wooden part is made by driving into the ground four poles of about two arshines in height, to which cross beams are fixed. The roof is

* The outward bay seems to be Dixon's Admiralty Bay, and Vancouver's Beering's Bay; the inner harbour, or the bay of Yakutat, Port Mulgrave. La Pérouse calls it Baye de Monti. Vancouver mentions that a party of Russians, with nine hundred natives of Kadiak and Cook's Inlet, had extended their excursions to Port Mulgrave. Vol. 3, p. 206. See his chart of this part of the coast, plate 12.





Resolution test chart showing patterns of vertical and horizontal lines with numerical values ranging from 1.0 to 2.5.



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

0
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99

sloping and formed of planks, resting on the cross beams, which meet in the square opening. The entrance is on the side, and instead of a door is covered with mats twisted from grass and other materials.

The greater part of the inhabitants had quitted their winter huts, and for the purpose of procuring provisions, were gone out in canoes and boats, which resemble those used at Kamtchatka. These people bear the name of Koliufki, and fix their dwellings on the banks of the different rivers. Besides an inferior Toion, they are all subject to a superior Toion, who is called Ilchak. We were informed by the natives that this Toion, with one hundred and fifty of his subjects, exclusive of children, visited this place in baidars. He has two sons, whose names are Nekchut and Chink, and his principal residence is on the coast to the south-east, much farther than the great river Tschitkat. It borders on the frontiers of the people called Tschitkanes, who, like the Koliufki, are at enmity among themselves, and often assault each other. This Toion rules over all the Koliufki, who inhabit the coast, as far as the bay of Yakutat, which is the last place in his dominions. This bay is frozen later than the end of July. According to information from the natives, it receives two considerable rivers; and at the departure of the ice is frequented by many sorts of fish. The islands and shores of the bay abound in the same trees as are to be found near that river whose mouth was frozen, and which we before visited.

In the vicinity of Yakutat, we observed bears, wolves, gluttons, foxes, sheep (Janotten), otters, squirrels, fables, ermines; also all sorts of sea animals, and land and water fowl.

As good water was not to be found near the anchorage, we steered to the rivulet which was four versts distant; we caught therein abundance of salmon; but finding the water indifferent, steered further to the north and north east between the islands and the continent, and at last met with a brook, which supplied excellent water. In every part of this bay of Yakutat, the air in fine weather is warm, and it is much sheltered by the forests.

The native Koliufki are in stature not short; they are in general like the Konaghi of a brown complexion; a few only are fair*. The men do not shave their hair, but bind it in a knot on the crown of their heads. They daub it with red paint, by means of a pencil made of wool, and ornament it with feathers. They cut their beards, and paint their faces, with stripes of various colours; they bore their ears, but not their lips. Some wear caps, like those of the grenadiers, with brass ornaments which they procure from Europeans, others cover their heads and necks with cloth made from the filaments of roots, and the back part ornamented with eagles' feathers.

Their upper garment, the outside of which is woollen, is thrown over the shoulder, and like the Tunguses they sometimes tie round their necks a kind of apron, ornamented with beaks of birds, and other trifles, which make a rattling noise. Their arms are bows, arrows, and lances, which they make chiefly of stone. The lances are fourteen inches long, in the middle five inches broad, and sharp towards the end and on the side†. Sometimes these

* It appears that the natural complexion of these people was white, but that their skins became dark from the paint and grease with which they smeared themselves.—See Meares, p. 259.

† Probably this is a species of dagger.

lances are suspended at the girth, and hang down as far as the middle of the leg, and at other times are slung round the shoulders under their clothes. With the beaks which they use for ornament, they harpoon sea-otters and seals, as they lie sleeping on the ice. They catch fish, also, sometimes with these instruments, sometimes by means of dams, and sometimes in small nets.

The dress of the women is similar to that of the men. They part their hair with a wooden comb into tresses, which they bind together in a tuft. They make a slit in their under lip, parallel to the mouth, and of the same length, and place therein a piece of wood shaped like a spoon, two inches long, and one inch and a half broad*. They bore five or six holes in their ears, and some of them tattoo their chins.

These people have neither laws nor religion. They worship, however, crows, from which they affect to be descended. They invoke these birds in their magic incantations, and pretend to receive their assistance in cases of distress. They make iron images resembling the heads of crows, with copper eyes, which they carry about them as charms, to render them successful and to preserve their health. These people are rude in their manners, and addicted to stealing. They burn their dead, place the ashes in a chest, and suspend it on poles, called *Imilafaby*.

In time of peace they traffic to the east with the *Tschitskanies*, and to the west with the *Ugalak-mutes*, and the *Tschugatki*; and since 1786, with

* See engravings of these extraordinary female ornaments in *La Pérouse*.

European navigators. They eagerly purchase different sorts of clothing, iron, kettles, and stills. But they are not so eager for beads and the like. They daily flocked to the ship in large and small baidars with their wives and children, and offered for sale the skins and tails of sea-otters and beavers, garments made of different skins, woollen clothes of their own manufacture, and purses made of grafs and the filaments of roots. They required in return their own for garments, different sorts of nankeen, linen and other shirts, and stills; for the other skins and articles, ear-rings of blue and red coral, and blue beads. As there were no settled rules for trade, they were extremely covetous in bartering, and peremptorily insisted on an additional present in every exchange. We saw in their possession several hatchets, which from their shape, we supposed to be procured from some European ship; and the natives said that in the spring of the year 1788, a three-masted vessel had anchored near the island, not far from the bay, and that one of the natives who visited the ship had been shot with a pistol.

Among other objects of barter, the natives offered two boys about twelve years old: one of them was of the Konaghi nation, and before the establishment of the Russian company in the island Kuktak (Kadiak), had been taken prisoner by the Kinaizi, and sold by them to the Tschugatski, from whom he was transferred to the Ugalak-mutes, and by them to the Koliufski. His name was Noyak-Köin, and he understood the languages of the Koliufski and Konaghi. The price of his purchase was four pounds and a quarter of iron, a large coral, and three strings of beads, and he was employed as an interpreter.

The other boy whose name was Nachu-Seynatzk was a native Tchitfkan,

K k 2

under-

understood the Tschitskan and Koliuski languages, and was extremely useful in pointing out many rivers on the American coast, and particularly the bay Ltoua. The inhabitants of their own accord gave this boy in exchange for the Tschugatsk who had sailed from Atchaka, and who had suffered so much from sea sickness, that he willingly quitted the ship.

On the 15th of June, Ilchak the Toion of the Koliuski, came to the ship, in company with a native artist, who painted according to their fashion, on wooden planks and other materials. Being admitted into the cabin he was much struck with some portraits, and requested a particular description of the persons whom they represented. Although we had already given the Toion and his subjects an account of these august personages, we again gratified his wishes. "One of these is, the portrait," we said, "of her Imperial Majesty, the all-gracious, and all-powerful Sovereign of the great Russian Empire. The other represents the Great Duke, her successor in the Russian throne, and his wife, the Great Duchess. The remainder are the resemblances of the Great Dukes and Lords, their descendants. Numerous people who inhabit the vast extent of the Russian Empire submit to the power of these illustrious personages." The Toion heard this explanation with veneration and astonishment, and we strengthened this impression by adding, "the Russian monarch and her successor are extremely gracious, and diffuse their blessings among innumerable people. They also pay indefatigable attention to the welfare of all those nations who border on the Russian Empire, and have no protector; employing all possible means to preserve them in content, peace, and security. The Russian protection extends even to this district, to such a degree that no strangers would venture to give the smallest molestation to so favoured a spot." As a still further proof that all this part of the American continent and islands enjoyed

enjoyed the protection of the Russian Empire, one of the copper coats of arms was produced, and after a suitable compliment delivered to the Toion. He was requested to wear it upon the fore-part of his garment, and it would serve as a mark of fidelity, and protect his subjects against all foreign ships.

The Toion having listened with attention to these representations, received the coat of arms with extreme joy, and returned to his habitation.

On the 16th the Toion paid another visit to the ship, in company with two elders; he wore on his sea-otter mantle the coat of arms fastened with red serge, which he had before received from us. After many compliments he earnestly intreated that in memorial of the great successor to the Imperial throne, he might be gratified with one of the portraits which he had seen in the cabin; and as there happened to be on board two engravings of the Great Duke, one of them was delivered to him, with this inscription in the Russian and German languages: " His Imperial Highness Paul Petrovitch, successor to the throne of all the Russias, and Sovereign of the Duchy of Holstein." Above was also written: " In June, 1788, the Factor of the company of Golikof and Schelekof, the pilots Gerassim Ismaelof, and Dmitri Betscharof, of the galliot the Holy Fathers, with forty men, being in the bay of Yakutat, carried on a considerable traffic with the Toion Ilchack and his subjects the Koliuski, and finally received them under the protection of the Russian Empire. As a memorial of these events, we gave the said Toion a Russian coat of arms, on copper, and this engraving of his Imperial Highness the successor to the Russian throne. Orders are hereby given to all Russian and foreign ships sailing to this place, to treat this Toion with cordiality and

" friend-

" friendship, without omitting the necessary precautions: the said pilots who
" anchored here in the galliot from the 11th to the 21st of June, experienced
" from the Toion and his people, the most friendly behaviour."

After writing this inscription, the portrait was delivered to the Toion, who received it with extreme satisfaction, and as customary, with an extatic shriek. As a proof of his subjection to Russia he gave on his part an iron image of a crow's head, which he considered as sacred; a bag wove from grass, and striped with various colours; six sea-otter shirts, also a leathern and wooden table which were painted with divers colours, and inlaid with stones. After remaining a considerable time on board, the Toion and the elders returned on shore.

On the 18th of June the Russians landed and buried another copper-plate in a place which was accurately specified; and as from the information of the natives the place abounded in fish, they remained in the place to the 21st, to lay in a stock of fresh provisions.

CHAP. 4.

*Quit the Bay of Yakutat—Sail along the Coast—Explore the River Ralco—
Enter the Bay of Ltoua, probably Portlock's Harbour—Visited by a native
Chief—Discover an Anchor which had been lost by an European Ship—
Description of the Bay of Ltoua—Lose an Anchor—Quit the Bay—Reach
Kadiak.*

ON the 21st we weighed anchor and were towed into the large bay, and from thence to the sea; the natives assisting in their baidars. At six o'clock in the afternoon, the wind blowing fresh from the north, we took leave of the natives, who intreated us to return, and promised to use their utmost endeavours to procure skins and furs.

We stood out to sea; but after repeated tacking were compelled by the boisterous weather to run to the west. In the afternoon, however, we determined to steer towards the mouth of the river, which was choked with ice, and to anchor therein, under the expectation that in the interval of eighteen days the ice had been broken up, and that we should be able to provide ourselves with fresh fish; as the supply we had brought from the last bay was spoiled by the heat of the weather, and our salt provisions began to be unwholesome.

At eight P. M. steering north-west and north, we drew near the river; but on account of a contrary wind were obliged to cast anchor in ten fathom water,

ON

on a sandy bottom. Here we observed the weather clearing up, and large pieces of ice drifting from the river. As the ship began to drive, and as it was dangerous to remain at our anchorage, we again hoisted sail, and continued the whole day plying with a contrary wind. On the 27th we sailed with a light breeze along the coast, which was continually in sight, to the east.

On the 28th at two P. M. as we approached the bay of Yakutat, where we had before anchored, several of the Koliuski came off in their baidars. One, however, returned to the shore, and the two others drew near the ship. On being questioned, they replied they had discerned the ship at sea, and came to pay us a friendly visit. But in fact these islanders mistook our ship for another vessel, and finding themselves deceived, soon followed their companions to the bay, while we continued our course at the distance of four versts from the shore, which was flat, sandy, and covered with forests. At half past seven we were a-breast of the mouth of the river Antlin, which traversed a broad valley lying between the mountains, and emptied itself into the sea in a low situation, from the N. W. On one side of this river is a spit of sand which stretches a little way into the sea, and forms a small bay. On both sides of this bank the mouth of the river is broad, and as the Koliuski boy informed us, of sufficient depth to admit our galliot without risk. The coasts were low and sandy; but the chain of mountains covered with snow extended inland. In three miles and a half we were opposite to the mouth of the river Ralco, which we sailed by, but were compelled by contrary winds to return and cast anchor.

On the 29th, Ismaelof with twelve Russians ascended the river in a baidar, which flows from the north through two vallies full of snow, between the mountains.

mountains. Towards the west there were no trees, but on the east, at some distance, much wood. The depth of the mouth was one fathom and a quarter at low water. We observed herein no fish; we saw traces of footsteps, but no inhabitants. On the return of the baidar, we sailed with a favourable breeze; and had always in sight a strait low shore, which for the space of five miles was covered with forests.

At eight in the morning we passed another river called Alzec, with a little island on the east side, and sand-banks at the mouth. We were desirous of exploring the river, which was probably frequented by the Koliufki; but as the wind blew directly on the shore, we continued our course, and at eleven discerned another river named Rakan-in, which flows under the north-east side of a cape, and is also frequented by the Koliufki. After passing this river, the coast was no longer flat or sandy, and though not high, yet somewhat steep and clothed with forests: the overhanging tops of the mountains appeared to be covered with snow.

On the 1st of July, at eight P. M. the Koliufki boy pointed out a bay lying behind a snow-mountain, which he informed us contained many fish, and in which a large ship had not long ago anchored. In consequence of this intelligence we changed our course, but were obliged to return, and at five in the morning approached the coast under the snow-mountain*; here we found instead of a bay a sandy and woody shore.

On the 2d at four in the morning, on the repeated assurances of the boy,

* Probably Cape Fairweather.

we sailed towards the Cape, which stretched under the coast to the south-east, and was distinguished by two small islands. The wind falling, we did not approach it; but sent some Konaghi in baidars lashed together to explore it, who returned about two in the afternoon, with the information, that they had found a harbour, and observed many inhabitants; yet we did not venture to enter, as we were totally unacquainted with the coast.

On the 3d at four P. M. we quitted the river Rakan-in, and in seventeen miles came to the mouth of the above-mentioned bay Ltoua. But as we were also unacquainted with this part of the coast, Ismaelof with fifteen men was sent in a baidar to explore it, and we suffered the vessel to drive with the current.

As the wind was north-easterly, and we drew towards the shore, we stood to sea for half-an-hour, to get a-breast of the opening; and on returning, we were joined by the baidar, followed it into the bay, and came to anchor in seven or eight fathom water, under the shore, which lay N. E. and S. W.

We pursued our course with a northerly and north-easterly wind between rocks and the cape, which was covered with birch. Having cleared the rocks, we returned back again into the bay north and north-west. But the current being contrary, we approached the right side of the mouth, and anchored in a bay with a sandy shore, in four fathom water, on rocky ground. Some natives came in their baidars to the ship; but as it was too late to trade with them we dismissed them till the next day.

Our vicinity to the mouth, a violent surf at high-water, and the rocky bottom rendering our situation dangerous, we towed the ship farther into the bay
towards

towards a little island, where two years before, according to the information of the Koliuski boy, a foreign ship had anchored.

We found here a very small but convenient bay, where at eight in the morning we anchored. For some time no natives made their appearance; but at one o'clock, P. M. several, who proved to be of the Koliuski tribe, rowed to the ship in three baidars, and other small boats. With these came the Toion, whose name was Taiknuck Tachtuiack*, accompanied by two elders. On being admitted into the cabin, he inquired by means of the interpreter, from whence we came. We replied, that those he saw were people of the great Russian Empire, who, with many others, were subject to the all-ruling power of her Imperial Majesty; a most wise and glorious monarch. He heard this information with the most impressive attention, and expressed still greater satisfaction, when we pointed out to him the portraits of the Empress and the Great Duke. We then expatiated on the power and authority of the Sovereign of All The Russias, and with such effect, that the Toion, in the most solemn manner, expressed his full reliance on the protection of the Russians, and his resolution of persevering in his friendly behaviour. We then exhibited a Russian coat of arms, and presented it to him with the same ceremonies and with the same explanations as we had done to the Koliuski Chief Ilchak. From these circumstances he conceived such an exalted idea of the Russian power, that he not only received the gift with the highest degree of veneration; but presented nine sea-otter skins and six sea-otter

* This is probably the same name as that of the Chief Taatucktellignuke who visited Captain Portlock in June, 1787, in Port Etches, but whether it was the same person cannot be ascertained.—Portlock's Voyage, p. 237.

mantles, and requested that they might be forwarded to the all-powerful Empress, as a proof of his gratitude and zeal.

We then traded with the natives, and exchanged for their skins and furs, iron-kettles, clothes, and beads. In the afternoon they returned in their baidars to their dwelling-place, which was situated about a verst and a half from the ship. These habitations were temporary summer huts, while they were employed in procuring fish and other provisions. Their winter habitations were situated on the banks of a small river which falls into the sea, at the distance of about five versts and a half. To this place two Russians and some Konaghi repaired in baidars, as well for the purpose of exploring as of fishing, and found these dwellings much larger than the summer huts. The mouth of the river being choaked up with rocks, even the baidars could not enter it without great difficulty. The fish were very indifferent.

On the 5th of July the Tschitfkan boy, who had accompanied us from the bay of Yakutat, informed us that the summer before a great ship lay here, which had left her anchor in the bay; that the natives had hove it up at low-water, and he pointed out a wood where it was conveyed. In consequence of this intelligence the commanders of the galliot having obtained permission of the Toion, Taiknuck, sent some men in a baidar towards the spot, where they found, and brought the anchor to the ship. It weighed seven hundred and eighty pounds, and the ring and flukes were broken off*. This day

* Portlock, in the beginning of August, 1787, discovered this bay and remained in it until August 23d. His cable was cut by the natives, and he was obliged to leave his anchor, which circumstance fully marks the identity of the bay. p. 277. It was called from him Portlock's Harbour:

day we took on opportunity of burying near the mouth of the rivulet, not far from a low promontory to the left of the little island, opposite to its southern extremity, another copper coat of arms between two seals.

The bay of Ltoua is of tolerable magnitude, and in general deep. The bottom is chalky in the deepest parts, and near the shore gravelly, mixed with muscle shells. On one part of the shore are a small rock and a stone quarry.

Round the bay, but particularly inland, are high mountains covered with snow. On the abrupt declivities, half way up their sides, and in the low grounds are trees and underwood, such as abound in the bay of Yakutat. Only one small rivulet runs into the bay, which is without fish. The mouth of the harbour is frequented by *Turpanen*, which, according to our observation come for the purpose of breeding at this time of the year. At the mouth of the harbour the variation was 1 h. 13 m.

Although these people seem to have their elders or chiefs, they are all under the dominion of Ilchak. Their customs and manners are similar to those of the other Koliufki which have been already described.

On the 6th we anchored in the mouth of the harbour, for the purpose of catching turbot, and raised a wooden cross on a cliff on the eastern side. At eight in the evening, the east and south-east wind blowing violently, accompa-

Harbour; the latitude, however, does not perfectly agree. According to the Russian Journalist, the bay of Ltoua lies between 58°, and 59, latitude, but Portlock's Harbour is situated nearly in lat. 57°, 36'. This difference may arise from the inaccuracy of the Russian observations.

nied

nied with rain, we threw out two small anchors. At midnight some of the natives slipped one of these anchors, which weighed four pood, and carried it away. We immediately sent some men in a baidar, towards the shore, who, on account of the darkness did not venture to land till the morning, when they carefully searched along the shore, and in the woods, but to no purpose; and as we did not chuse to complain either of the Toion or his subjects, no further search was made.

As the scurvy began to appear among the crew we determined to postpone our discoveries, and to return to Kuktak (Kadiak), particularly as the wind, which now began to set in south-west and west, rendered our navigation on the coast dangerous.

On the 9th of July, at two P. M., we accordingly weighed anchor at high-tide, and sailed from the bay, which lies between 58°. and 59°. of latitude, proceeding south-west, directly towards the island Kuktak. But as we were frequently driven by contrary winds and currents from our course, towards the south, our ship's reckoning could not be exactly ascertained. After sailing one hundred and thirty miles from the bay of Ltoua, we came at half past two P. M. on the 13th in sight of the island Shelik*, distant five versts; at night doubled the southern extremity with a view to run into the bay; but being prevented by contrary winds, on the 14th we anchored in another bay, which lies on the other side of the promontory. On the 15th, the wind falling, we turned into the bay of Kuktac, which we fortunately reached at midnight.

* This is probably a false print for Shuyech, which Sauer describes as two miles north of Afognak, and the northern cape of which was called by Cook, Point Banks.—Sauer, p. 185.

The Greek Delatof, principal factor of the company returned in the galliot to Okotsk, and in the spring of 1789, Betsharof sailed from Kuktac in the other vessel with twenty-eight men, laden with the American merchandise; and after beating about in contrary winds and violent storms, without discovering land, reached the harbour of Okotsk on the 6th of August, and delivered the journal of the voyage, with all the goods, to the governor, and Schelekof one of the chiefs of the Russian company.

CHAP. 5.

Additional Remarks on the Russian Settlement in Kadiak, from Vancouver.

THE settlement formed by Shelekov in the isle of Kadiak has more contributed to spread the extent of the Russian trade and power in the North Pacific Ocean, than any of the preceding expeditions. He sent out detached parties who formed establishments on various parts of the American continent, and kept the natives in due order and subjection.

During his survey of the American coast, Vancouver met with many considerable hunting parties under the command of Russians; one in particular which he saw in Portlock's Harbour, consisting of not less than nine hundred natives of Kadiak, and of the adjacent regions.

He likewise mentions their settlement at Port Etches, or Nootcheck, and gives a particular detail of a factory which they had established in Cook's Inlet. His account is here submitted to the reader, because it will serve to shew the œconomy of their settlements, and the sway they have established over the natives:

“ This establishment occupied a space of about an hundred and twenty yards square, fenced in by a very stout paling of small spars of pine and birch placed close together about twelve feet high. These were fixed firm in the ground,

ground, yet they appeared to be a very defenceless barricade against any hostile attempts, even of the Indians, as the whole might easily be reduced to ashes by fire on the outside, as could also their houses within the fence, those being built with wood and covered with thatch. The largest of these resembling in its shape a barn, was about thirty-five yards long, about as many feet in breadth, and about ten or twelve feet high; this was appropriated to the residence of thirty-six Russians, who, with their commander, Mr. Stephen Zikoff, then on an excursion to Prince William's Sound, comprehended the total number of Russians at this station; all of whom, excepting the commander, reside in this house, which principally consists of one common room, answering all the purposes of shelter, feeding, and sleeping in. For their better accommodation when at rest, two platforms, each about eight feet wide, were raised about eight or nine inches from the ground or floor, and extended from end to end on each side of the room; these were divided into eighteen open partitions or stalls, one of which was allotted to each person as his particular apartment, the middle of the room being common to them all. The stalls were divided like those in the stables of public inns, by posts only, on which hung their spare apparel, with their arms and accoutrements. The room though unglazed, was tolerably light, as in the windows a substitute for glass was made use of, which we supposed to be a thin membrane from the intestines of the whale; this admitted a sufficient quantity of light for all their purposes, and excluded the wind and inclemency of the weather. The largest of these windows was at the farthest or upper end, near which stood a very humble wooden table, very rudely wrought, and surrounded by forms of the same material. To these we were conducted by two of the party, who seemed to have superiority over the rest, one of whom appeared to be the principal person in the absence of Mr. Zikoff; the other a kind of steward, or person

M m

charged

charge with the moveable property belonging to the factory. If we understood them right, this settlement had been thus established twelve years, notwithstanding we did not perceive that any attempt had been made, either to cultivate the land, or to supply themselves more comfortably by the introduction of domestic animals. The only refreshment they had to offer, was some cold boiled halibut, and raw dried salmon, intended to be eaten with it by way of bread. * * * * * We found it (the settlement) to consist of a smaller house, situated at the west end of the large one, in which Mr. Zikoff, the commander, resided, and two or three and twenty others of different dimensions, all huddled together without any kind of regularity, appropriated to the depositing of stores, and to the educating of Indian children in the Russian language and religious persuasion; they were also the residence of such natives as were the companions or the immediate attendants on the Russians composing the establishment. Our attention was next directed to the vessel we had been informed belonged to this place. She was found hauled up just above the general line of high-water mark, close under the cliffs on which their houses were erected. Her burthen I estimated at about sixty or seventy tons; she was very clumsily rigged with two masts, and her hull had the oakum dropping out of the seams, and was in other respects much out of repair. In this situation she had been for two years, and was still to remain there two years longer, when this party would be relieved, and the vessel repaired, in which they would return to Kamtschatka.

"The place where the vessel was laid up was hardly within sight of their habitation; she could, therefore, in the event of any misunderstanding with the natives, have been easily set on fire, or otherwise destroyed, which would have

NOT

not been so easily accomplished had she remained in the creek, where the water seemed of sufficient depth to keep her constantly afloat, and by that means to afford the Russians a retreat that might prove very desirable in the event of any insurrection. Their apprehensions, however, on this score did not seem very great, for they were very ill provided to defend themselves against any attack. The whole of their armour consisted of two small brass swivel guns, each carrying about a pound shot, mounted on the balcony of a large house, which is sufficiently high to overlook all the inclosed premises; a similar piece of ordnance at the door of the entrance, about a dozen muskets hanging apparently in constant readiness near the upper end of the great room, with two or three pistols, and a few short daggers*."

* Vol. 3, p. 141.

CHAP. 6.

Voyage of Discovery made by Captain Billings, from 1785 to 1794—Departure from Kamtchatka—Touches at Kadiak—Account of Shelekov's Establishment—Reaches Prince William's Sound—Error concerning the Position of Cape St. Elias—Kaye's Island—Return to Kamtchatka—Second Expedition—Passes the Chain of Aleütian Islands to Unalashka—Sails to the Bay of St. Laurence—Traverses the Country of the Tchutshi—The Ships return to and winter at Unalashka—Distresses of the Crews—Account of the Inhabitants, and the Mode of carrying on the Russian Trade—Final return to Kamtchatka.

SINCE the expedition of Ismaelof and Betsharof, the only voyage of discovery made in these regions by the Russians, of which any specific account has reached us, is that undertaken by Captain Billings, the commencement of which was announced in the comparative view, annexed to the last edition of this work. This voyage was principally undertaken at my suggestion, with a view to complete the discoveries of Cook. My proposal, laid before Catharine the Second, by Pallas, was adopted, and the execution committed to Mr. Billings, a naval officer in the Russian service, who, as he had accompanied Captain Cook in his celebrated voyage to the North Pacific Ocean, was supposed to be well qualified for this undertaking. His instructions, which I assisted in drawing up, were calculated to ascertain the desiderata in the geography of those parts of Asia and America, and the intermediate islands.

For

For the account of this expedition the public are indebted to Mr. Sauer, who accompanied Captain Billings as his private secretary; and from his narrative I shall form an abstract of the voyage, as completing the Russian discoveries to the latest period.

After failing in his attempt to force a passage from the Kovyma towards Cape North, of which an account will be given in a subsequent chapter, Billings passed through the heart of Siberia to Okotsk, where the vessels were building for the expedition to the new-discovered islands, and the coast of America. But finding them not ready, he returned to Yakutsk, where he wintered.

The ships were at length completed late in 1789, and called the *Glory of Russia*, and the *Good Intent*. But the latter being driven on shore as it was working out of the harbour, the commander sailed in the other vessel, and on the 1st of October arrived at St. Peter and St. Paul, where he passed the winter.

At length, on the 16th of May, 1790, he took his final departure from the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, touched on the 4th of June at Unalashka, and reached Shelekof's settlement on the eastern coast of the isle of Kadiak on the 2d of July.

Mr. Sauer has given an interesting account of this establishment, the principal particulars of which we shall lay before the reader, as they will exhibit the progress and state of the settlement under the management of Delareff:

“ This

" This and the nearer islands are inhabited by about one thousand three hundred males, and one thousand two hundred youths, with about the same number of females, according to the register kept by Shelekoff's establishment, now under the direction of Yesskat Ivanitch Delareff, a Greek, who informed me he had now out on the chace, for the benefit of the company, upwards of five hundred double baidars of the natives, each under the direction of a single Peredoffnik or Russian leader. Beside these, small parties were sent out daily to fish for halibut, cod, &c. Females are employed in cutting and drying useful plants, berries, &c., and in making the dresses of the natives, as also for the Russians. About two hundred of the daughters of the chiefs are kept at the Russian habitations near our anchoring-place, as hostages for the natives, and as far as I could learn they are perfectly well satisfied with the treatment they meet with. The males are less satisfied, and at the first arrival of the Russians, seemed inclined to oppose their residing on the island; but Shelekof surprising their women collecting of berries, carried them prisoners to his habitation, and kept them as hostages for the peaceable behaviour of the men, only returning wives for daughters, and the younger children of the chiefs. Every considerable habitation of the natives had large baidars capable of containing forty or fifty men. These were all purchased by Shelekoff; and the natives are now only in possession of small canoes, none of which carry more than three. They seem reconciled to the rules introduced by the present chief of the company, Delareff, who governs with the strictest justice, as well natives as Russians, and has established a school, where the young natives are taught the Russian language, reading and writing. He allows a certain number of the hostages to visit their relations for a stipulated time; these returning, others are allowed to go; and upon application of any one for his child's

child's absence it is not refused. The whole number of hostages is about three hundred.

" The males are employed in the chase in rotation, as are also the females : I mean for the benefit of the community ; for they lay in an amazing stock of provisions, roots, berries, &c. to be sufficient for a winter's supply for the whole island, natives as well as Russians ; a circumstance which seems more than any thing else to convince the savages that the Russians are not their absolute enemies ; for Delareff says, that they never laid in a supply of food for the winter till the Russians taught them ; but in bad weather were obliged to collect cockles, muscles, and other shell-fish, or refuse of the sea.

" Luxuries, such as tobacco, beads, linen, shirts, and nankeen dresses, they pay for in particular. I observed that such of the parties as were successful in procuring rich skins, received a stipulated payment, for each sea-otter, a string of beads about four feet long ; for other furs in proportion, and that only food and skins of seals were the property of the community, of which the natives enjoy the greater share, being by far the more numerous ; and the skins of seals are chiefly used by the natives to mend their baidars, and make new ones ; in the latter case they are purchased for furs, foxes, marmot, otters, &c. or by service.

" This establishment consists of about fifty Russians, including officers of the company, and Sturman Ismailoff, who is here on the part of government, to collect tribute ; this is the same Russian officer that was seen by Captain Cook's expedition at Oonalashta in the year 1778. He was one of the associates of Benyowsky's conspiracy (by his own account forced away) ; but

Beny-

Benyowsky only carried him to one of the Kuril islands, where he flogged him, and put him a-shore with several others that were disaffected.

" The buildings consist of five houses after the Russian fashion. Barracks laid out in different apartments, somewhat like the boxes at a coffee-house, on either side, with different offices : an office of appeal to settle disputes, levy fines, and punish offenders by a regular trial ; here Delareff presides ; and I believe that few courts of justice pass a sentence with more impartiality : an office of receipt and delivery, both for the company and for tribute. The commissaries' department, for the distribution of the regulated portions of provision, counting-house, &c. are all in this building, at one end of which is Delareff's habitation. Another building contains the hostages ; besides which there are store-houses, rope-walk, smithy, carpenter's shop, and cooperage.

" Two vessels (gallies) of about eighty tons each, are now here, quite unrigged, and hauled on a low scaffold near the water's edge. These are armed and well guarded, and serve for the protection of the place. Several of the Russians have their wives with them, and keep gardens of cabbages and potatoes, four cows, and twelve goats. Delareff is of opinion that corn will grow near the establishment which they are about forming in Cook's River*."

Mr. Sauer has added a curious account of the customs, manners, and occupations of the natives, which corresponds in general with that of Shelekov, and therefore needs not be inserted.

* P. 170-172.

On the 6th of July Captain Billings quitted Kadiak, passed by Afognak, and came in sight of Montague Island, which is called by the natives Sucklia. The commander here adopted the erroneous geography of Shelekof, and supposing the southern point of Montague Island to be the Cape St. Elias of Beering, assumed an additional rank, to which he was intitled by the Imperial mandate. This error has crept into the Russian charts, and obscured the geography of these regions; but it is justice to Mr. Sauer to inform the reader that he has corrected this material error, and produced incontrovertible evidence that Kaye's Island was the Cape St. Elias. He likewise ascertained the position of Beering's Bay, and cleared up many obscurities in the accounts given by the Russian navigators.

Captain Billings continued at anchor in Prince William's Sound, in the place where Cook had anchored in 1778, till the 30th of July, 1790. On the 31st of July he came in sight of Kaye's Island, and at four in the afternoon saw *Mount St. Elias* * bearing N. E. 49°.

The 1st of August he kept a southerly course, and on account of his scanty stock of provisions determined to relinquish all further attempts. He accordingly directed his course south-westerly, and the crew suffered greatly from want of bread and water; but on the 10th of October came in sight of Shepoonfkoi Nofs, and the 14th entered the bay of St. Peter and St. Paul.

During the winter Captain Hall was employed in building another vessel at

* Nearly in the same position in which it was seen by Steller. This is the mountain which Cook justly considered as the Mount St. Elias of Beering.

Nisfni; but, notwithstanding the utmost exertions, he was unable to join Captain Billings.

Having broken the ice in the harbour of Avatcha, to open a passage for the ship, Billings took his departure on the 16th of May; on the 27th and 28th passed Beering's and Copper Island, directed his course along the chain of islands called by the Russians the Aleütian Islands, to Oonalashka, where he arrived on the 30th of June, and anchored in the basin of Illuluk.

Here leaving the stores for Captain Hall, under the care of two of his officers, he relinquished all further attempts on the coast of America. Directing his course northwards, he passed by Gore's and Clerk's Islands, landed for a few hours on the American coast near Point Rodney, and stretching across the mouth of Beering's Straits, anchored in the bay of St. Lawrence in the country of the Tchutski on the 4th of August.

Instead of fulfilling his instructions, by endeavouring to pass through the Frozen Ocean to the mouth of the Kovyma, Billings quitted the ship, and accompanied by some of his officers, a naturalist and draftsman, prosecuted his journey through the country of the Tchutski, to the Kovyma. In this journey he flattered himself with the hopes of making the necessary discoveries; but he was grievously disappointed. The Tchutski who inhabit these regions, a bold and hardy race, are wholly independent of Russia; though they received his party with apparent marks of cordiality, they plundered the baggage, destroyed the measuring lines and writing materials, prevented them from making any observations, and even threatened their lives. During this journey which lasted six months, they observed some singular customs of
the

the Tchutski which are recorded by Mr. Sauer, but the journal which he has given contains not a single observation relative to geography; and the coasts of the Tchutski on the Frozen Ocean remain as much unknown as before.

After a tedious journey, in which they suffered extremely from the severity of the cold, and the want of common necessaries, besides the dangers to which they were exposed from the natives, they arrived on the 21st of February at the Angarka, a small river which falls into the Kovima, from whence Billings proceeded by Yakutsk to Petersburg.

Meanwhile Captain Saretcheff took the command of the *Glory of Russia*, and returned to Unalashka on the 29th of August, where he was soon afterwards joined by Captain Hall, who had arrived at Unalashka a few days after the departure of Billings, had followed him to the bay of St. Lawrence, and then came back to Unalashka.

The two ships remained the whole winter in the bay of Illuluk, and the crews suffered greatly from the scurvy; more than three-fourths were confined to their hammocks, and seventeen fell victims to this dreadful complaint. Mr. Sauer, alone, escaped the ravages of this disorder by adopting the diet of the natives. "Thinking," he says, "the best way to guard against it, was to copy the natives in their mode of living, I made the chief part of my diet consist of raw fish, muscles, and limpets; using instead of tea in the morning, a tea-spoon full of essence of spruce in a small tea-kettle full of boiling water; and in the evening we boiled beer with berries, sugar, and pepper,

N n 2

which

which with the addition of some corn brandy was our substitute for punch*."

According to Mr. Sauer, the whole chain of the Aleütian Isles does not contain more than one thousand one hundred males, children included, of whom five hundred of the most active are constantly employed by different parties of the Russian traders.

Of their character and intellects Mr. Sauer gives a more favourable account than preceding navigators: "The capacity of the natives surpasses every idea I had formed of the abilities of the savages. The order established among them, and their subordination to such chiefs as they have selected for their rulers, certainly originate from principles of adoration which they possess for an existing invincible superiority, and govern their conduct with that propriety which seems most likely to attain security and protection, both in this world and the next; for they firmly believe in another world; and imagine such as live in conformity to the will of Aghuguk will then obtain all necessaries, with little trouble, and not be under the controul of the Kugak. Their behaviour, therefore, is not rude and barbarous; but mild, polite, and hospitable. At the same time, the beauty, proportion, and art with which they make their boats, instruments, and apparel, evince that they by no means deserve to be termed stupid, an epithet so liberally bestowed upon those whom Europeans call savages. It is much to be lamented that they are under the sway of the roving hunters, who are infinitely more savage than any tribes that I have met with; nor do I see any means of checking

* P. 263

their

their outrages, for the authority of government can never reach these distant regions: the only prospect of relief appears to me to consist in the total extirpation of the animals of the chase; and I think I may venture to say, from the daily havock made among them, that a very few years will serve to complete this business.

“ As I have so frequently mentioned the hunters, a succinct account of their proceedings may perhaps not prove uninteresting to my readers.

“ Their galliots are constructed at Ochotsk, or at Neizhni Kamchatka; and government, with a view of encouraging trade, have ordered the commandants of these places to afford as much assistance as they can to the adventurers: besides which, the materials of the very frequently wrecked transport vessels, though lost to government, are found the chief means of fitting out such an enterprise, and greatly lessen the expence. The sailors agree to the distribution of so many pais (shares) among them, in lieu of wages; thus their vessels are procured and manned. The cargo consists of about five hundred weight of tobacco; one hundred weight of glass beads; perhaps a dozen spare hatchets, and a few superfluous knives of very bad quality; an immense number of kleptsi (traps for foxes), and a small stock of provision, consisting of a few hams, a little rancid butter, a few bags of rye and wheat flour for holidays (for they do not make a practice of eating bread every day), and a considerable quantity of dried and salted salmon. They are also supplied with a few rifled barrelled guns, and a quantity of ammunition for their defence against the natives.

“ Being thus equipped, with (Bozshe Pomotsh) God's help, they go to sea.

sea. Upon their arrival at any of the inhabited Aleutian Islands, they formerly used to take a number of women and a few men, as hostages; but now they take possession of the village, and after hauling their vessel on shore distribute their kleptsi to the natives to catch foxes, and send out parties to collect furs, to fish, and to chase sea-animals. Some of the hunters go to the contiguous islands, and exact the same obedience from all, while they themselves live in indolence and ease. The articles of trade, as they call them, are given in small quantities to the women to secure their attachment; and the men are sometimes rewarded for a hard day's work with a leaf of tobacco*."

Mr. Sauer thus concludes his account of their stay at Unalashka, and of their arrival at Avatcha:

"In March we began making preparations to leave this fatal island; when we discovered that our sails, cordage, and rigging of every description, had suffered from the climate as much as our ships company; every thing was quite rotten, and our vessels very foul. Captain Hall, who had now the command, took charge of the *Slava Russie*, and Captain Saretcheff went to the *Black Eagle*. Notwithstanding every individual exerted himself to the utmost of his abilities, however, we were not ready to depart before the middle of May.

"We had received, as a tribute from about five hundred of the natives of the Aleutian Isles, a dozen sea-otters' skins; and of fox skins, I believe, near six hundred of different sorts; in return for which, we had distributed all

* P. 274.

our trinkets and tobacco. The extreme poverty of this place prevented our obtaining any articles of value for ourselves: we procured, indeed, a few curiosities, but nothing else.

On the 16th of May our vessels were hauled into the outer bay. We were now elated at the prospect of once more revisiting Kamtchatka after the melancholy sensations that we had endured for eight months and sixteen days, passed in one continual state of anxiety upon this island, the grave of seventeen of our stoutest hands; where, during the whole of our stay, we had only been cheered eighteen times with the light of the sun, and never experienced one clear day. On the 17th we steered out of the bay of Amoknack, and the same day saw the very remarkable solitary rock, resembling a pillar, situated about thirty miles north of the eastern point of Oomnack.

Nothing remarkable happened during our passage to Kamtchatka. We lost sight of the Black Eagle on the 7th of June; and on the same day saw an island which we took for Semi Sopochni, burning in several places, particularly toward the southern extremity. On the 16th, after encountering a few contrary gales and baffling calms, we arrived in the bay of Avatcha, in a very thick fog (which fell upon us at the mouth of the bay) and came to anchor near the entrance of the inner harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, without being able to see any land*."

Thus terminated this voyage of discovery, begun under the most flattering prospects, but which, like most of the other Russian expeditions, failed from

* P. 276.—Captain Saretcheff in the Black Eagle arrived on the 19th.

the length of time consumed in preparations, the ravages of sickness, and the tedium naturally felt during a continuance of six years in these dreary and inhospitable regions. Without wishing to detract from the merit of the commander, we think that the skill and perseverance of a Cook or Vancouver, and the spirit of an English crew, would have attained the principal object of the expedition. Although no discoveries of importance were made; yet this voyage is some addition to the knowledge already possessed of these parts; and we may recommend Mr. Sauer's narrative as a curious and interesting performance from the details it contains relative to the customs and manners of the people, besides the information he has given on many points of geography.

SUPPLEMENTARY ACCOUNT
OF THE
RUSSIAN DISCOVERIES.

CHAP. I.

Attempts of the Russians to discover a North-East Passage—Voyages from Archangel towards the Lena—From the Lena towards Kamtchatka—Extract from Muller's Account of Deschneff's Voyage round Tschukotskoi Nofs—Narrative of a Voyage made by Shalauoff from the Lena to Shelat'skoi Nofs.

THE only communication hitherto known between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, or between Europe and the East Indies, is either by sailing round the Cape of Good Hope, or by doubling Cape Horn. But as both these navigations are tedious, the great object of several late European voyages has been directed towards the discovery of a North East or a North West passage. As this work is confined to the Russian navigations, any disquisition concerning the North West passage is foreign to the purpose; and for the same reason in what relates to the North East, these researches extend only to the attempts of the Russians for the discovery of that passage.

The advocates for the North East passage have divided that navigation into three principal parts; and by endeavouring to shew that the three parts have been separately passed, conclude the whole navigation to be practicable.

The three parts are, 1. from Archangel to the Lena; 2. from the Lena to Kamtchatka; 3. from Kamtchatka to Japan. With respect to the latter, the connection between the seas of Kamtchatka and Japan first appeared from some Japanese vessels wrecked on the coast of Kamtchatka in the beginning of the last century; and this communication has been proved from several voyages made by the Russians from Kamtchatka to Japan*.

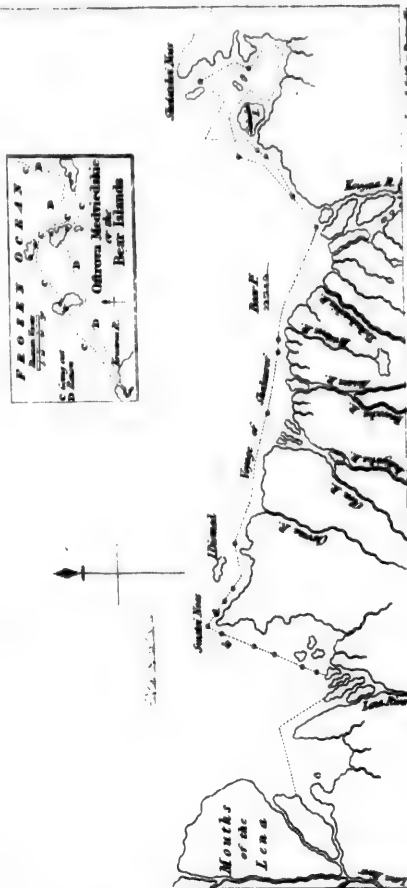
No one ever asserted that the first part from Archangel to the Lena was performed in one voyage; but several persons having advanced that this navigation has been made by the Russians at different times, it becomes necessary to examine the accounts of the Russian voyages in those seas.

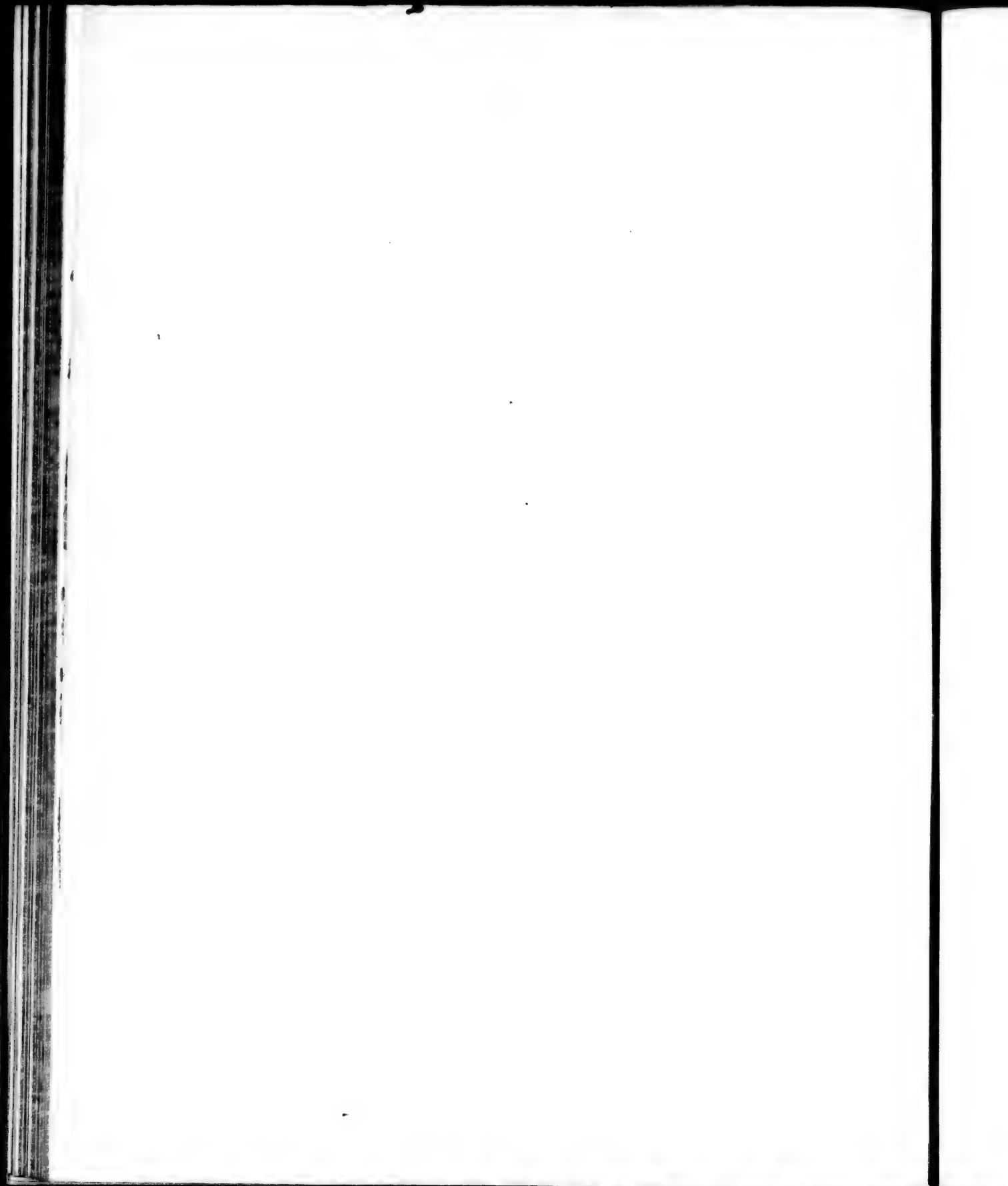
In 1734 lieutenant Moroviof sailed from Archangel toward the river Oby; but the first year he only reached the mouth of the Petchora. The next summer he passed through the straits of Weygatz into the sea of Kara; and coasted along the eastern side of that sea, as high as latitude $75^{\circ} 30'$, but did not double the promontory which separates the sea of Kara from the bay of Oby. In 1738, lieutenants Malgyn and Skurakof doubled that promontory with great difficulty, and entered the bay of Oby. During these expeditions the navigators encountered great dangers and impediments from the ice. Several unsuccessful attempts were made to pass from the bay of Oby to the

* S. R. G. III. p. 78, and p. 166, &c.

CHART of SHALAUROF'S VOYAGE

N O R T H E R N O R F R O Z E N O C E A N





Yenisèi, which was at last effected in 1738 by two vessels under lieutenants Offzin and Koskelef. The same year the pilot Feodor Menin sailed from the Yenisèi towards the Lena: he steered north as high as latitude $70^{\circ}. 15'$, but at the mouth of the Plafida he was stopped by the ice, and unable to force a passage, returned to the Yenisèi*.

July, 1735, lieutenant Prontshistshof sailed from Yakutsk up the Lena to its mouth, to proceed by sea to the Yenisèi. The western mouths of the Lena being choaked with ice, he was obliged to pass through the most easterly; and was prevented by contrary winds from getting out until the 13th of August. Having steered north-west through the islands scattered before the mouths of the Lena, he found himself in lat. $70^{\circ}. 4'$; saw much ice to the north-east; and observed ice-islands from twenty-four to sixty feet in height. He steered betwixt the ice, which in no place left a free channel of greater breadth than two hundred yards. The vessel being much damaged, on the 1st of September he ran up the mouth of the Olenek, which, according to estimation, lies in $72^{\circ}. 30'$, and there passed the winter†.

He quitted the Olenek the beginning of August, and arrived on the third at the mouth of the Anabara, which he found to lie in latitude $73^{\circ}. 1'$. There he continued until the 10th, while some of the crew examined the country in search of mines. On the 10th he proceeded on his voyage: before he reached the mouth of the Katanga, he was entirely hemmed in with ice, and extricated himself not without great difficulty and danger. He then ob-

* S. R. G. III. p. 145 to 149.

† Gmelin Reise, II. 425 to 427.

served a large field of ice stretching into the sea, which obliged him to continue near the shore, and run up the Katanga, the mouth of which river was in latitude $74^{\circ} 9'$. From thence he bent his course mostly northward along the shore, until he reached the mouth of the Taimura on the 18th. He proceeded from the coast towards the Piasida; near the shore were several small islands, between which and the land the ice was immovably fixed. He stood out to sea, to pass round the chain of islands, and at first found the sea more free to the north of the islands, while he observed much ice lying between them. He reached at length the last island, situated in latitude $77^{\circ} 25'$, between which and the shore, as well as on its northern side, the ice was immovable. He attempted, however, to steer still more to the north; and having advanced about six miles, was prevented by a thick fog from proceeding. This fog dispersing, he saw that the ice towards the sea was not fixed; but the accumulated masses were so close, that the smallest vessel could not have worked its way through. Still attempting, however, to pass to the north, he was forced by the ice N. E., but in danger of being hemmed in, he returned to the Taimura; and from thence with much difficulty and danger reached the Olenek on the 29th of August.

This narrative of the expedition is extracted from the account of professor* Gmelin. According to Muller†, who has given a cursory relation of the same voyage, Pronzhistshof did not quite reach the mouth of the Taimura; for he there found the chain of islands stretching from the continent far into the sea, and the channels between them choaked with ice; after steering as high as latitude $77^{\circ} 25'$ he found such a plain of fixed ice before him, that

* Gmelin Reise, vol. II. p. 427 to p. 434.

† S. G. III. p. 149, 150.

they had no prospect of forcing a passage; he therefore returned to the Olenok.

Another voyage, to pass from the Lena to the Yeniseï in 1730, was attempted by Khariton Laptief, with as little success; he relates, that between the rivers Piafida and Taimura there is a promontory which he could not double, the sea being entirely frozen before he could pass round*.

From all these circumstances it appears that the whole space between Archangel and the Lena has never been navigated; for steering east from the Yeniseï, the Russians could reach no farther than the mouth of the Piafida; and, according to Muller, east of the Taimura.

The Russians, who sail almost annually from Archangel, and other towns, to Nova Zemla, to catch sea-horses, seals, and white bears, make to the western coast; and no Russian vessel has ever doubled its north-eastern extremity†.

The

* Gmelin Reise, p. 440. Muller says only, that Laptief met with the same obstacles which forced Prontshistshef to return. S. R. G. III, p. 150.

† Although this work is confined to the Russian Discoveries, yet as the N. E. passage is a subject of such curiosity, it might seem an omission in not mentioning, that several English and Dutch vessels have passed through the Straits of Weygatz into the sea of Kara: they all met with great obstructions from the ice, and had much difficulty in getting through. See *Histoire Gen. des Voyages*, tom. XV. passim.

In 1696 Heemskirk and Barentz, after having sailed along the western coast of Nova Zemla, doubled the north-eastern cape lying in latitude 70°. 20', and got no lower along the eastern coast than 76°, where they wintered.

See an account of this remarkable voyage in Girard Le Ver's *Vraye Description des Trois Voyages de Mer*. p. 13 to 45; and *Hist. Gen. des Voy.* tom. XV. p. 111 to 139.

The navigation from the Lena to Kamtchatka now remains to be considered. If we may believe some authors, this navigation has been open above a century and an half; and several vessels have at different times passed round the north-eastern

No vessel of any nation has ever passed round that cape, which extends to the north of the Piasida, and is laid down in the Russian charts in about 78°. latitude. We have already seen that no Russian vessel has ever reached from the Piasida to the Katanga, or from the Katanga to the Piasida; and yet some authors have positively asserted, that this promontory has been doubled. In order, therefore, to elude the Russian accounts, which clearly assert the contrary, it is pretended, that Gmelin and Muller have purposely concealed some parts of the Russian journals, and imposed upon the world by a misrepresentation of facts. But I can venture to affirm, that no sufficient proof has been advanced in support of this assertion; and therefore, until some positive information shall be produced, we cannot deny plain facts, or prefer hearsay evidence to circumstantial and well attested accounts.

Engel, in a remarkable passage in his "Essai sur une route par le Nord Est," asserts, in the most positive manner, that two Dutch vessels formerly passed three hundred leagues to the north-east of Nova Zemla; whence he infers, that they must have doubled the cape, north of the Piasida, and have reached as far east as the mouth of the Olenek. His words are, "L'illustre Société Royale, sous l'an 1675, rapporte ce voyage, et dit, que peu d'années auparavant une Société de marchands d'Amsterdam avoit fait une tentative pour chercher le passage du nord est, et équipa deux vaisseaux les quels étant passé au septante neuf ou huitantieme degré de latitude, avoient poussé selon Wood, jusqu'à trois cent lieues à l'Est de la Nouvelle Zemble, &c. &c." Upon this fact he founds his proof that the navigation from Archangel to the Lena has been performed. "Par consequent cette partie de la route a été faite." He rests the truth of this account on the authority of the Philosophical Transactions, and of Captain Wood, who sailed on a voyage for the discovery of the north-east passage in 1676. The latter, in the relation of his voyage, enumerates several arguments which induced him to believe the practicability of the north-east passage.—"The seventh argument," he says, "was another narration, printed in the Transactions, of two ships of late that had attempted the passage, sailed three hundred leagues to the eastward of Nova Zemla, and had after prosecuted the voyage, had not a difference arose betwixt the undertakers and the East-India company." We here find that Captain Wood refers to the Philosophical Transactions for his authority. The narration alluded to by both Captain Wood and Mr. Engel, is found in vol. IX. of the Philosophical Transactions, p. 209, for December, 1674. It consists of a very curious "Narrative of some observations made upon several voyages, undertaken to find a way for sailing North about to the East Indies; together with instructions given by the Dutch East India Company for the discovery of the famous

eastern extremity of Asia. But if we consult the Russian accounts, we shall find, that frequent expeditions have been made from the Lena to the Kovyma; but that the voyage from the Kovyma round Tschukotskoi Nofs, into the

famous land of Jesso near Japan." These instructions were, in 1643, given to Martin Geritsee Vries, captain of the ship *Castricum*, "who set out to discover the unknown eastern coast of Tartary, the kingdom of Kata, and the west coast of America, together with the isles situate to the east of Japan, cried up for the riches of gold and silver." These instructions contain no relation of two Dutch vessels, which passed three hundred leagues east of Nova Zemla. Mention is indeed made of two Dutch vessels, "which were sent out in the year 1639, under the command of Captain Kwast, to discover the east coast of the Great Tartary, especially the famous gold and silver islands; though, by reason of several unfortunate accidents, they both returned *re infectâ*." Short mention is afterwards made of Captain Kwast's journal, together with the writings of the merchants who were with him, as follows: "That in the South Sea, at the $37\frac{1}{2}$ degrees northern latitude, and about four hundred Spanish, or three hundred and forty-three Dutch miles, that is, twenty-eight degrees longitude east of Japan, there lay a very great and high island, inhabited by a white, handsome, kind, and civilized people, exceedingly opulent in gold and silver, &c. &c."

From these extracts it appears, that, in the short account of the journals of the two Dutch vessels, no longitude is mentioned to the east of Nova Zemla; but the discoveries of Kwast were made in the South Sea, to which place he, as well as Captain Vries afterwards, must have sailed round the Cape of Good Hope. The author of the narrative concludes, indeed, that the N. E. passage is practicable, in the following words: "To promote this passage out of the East Indies to the north into Europe, it were necessary to sail from the East Indies to the westward of Japan, all along Corea, to see how the sea-coasts tend to the north of the said Corea, and with what conveniency ships might sail as far as Nova Zemla, and to the north of the same. Where our author saith, that undoubtedly it would be found, that having passed the north corner of Nova Zemla, or through Weygatz, the north end of Yelmer Land, one might go on south-eastward, and make a successful voyage." But mere conjectures cannot be admitted as evidence. As we can find no other information relative to the fact mentioned by Captain Wood and Mr. Engel, (namely, that two Dutch vessels have passed three hundred leagues to the east of Nova Zemla), we have no reason to credit mere assertions without proof: we may therefore advance as a fact, that hitherto we have no authentic account that any vessel has ever passed the cape to the east of Nova Zemla, which lies north of the river Piasida.—See *Relation of Wood's Voyage, &c.* in the *Account of several late Voyages and Discoveries to the South and North, &c.* London, 1694, p. 148. See also Engel, *Mem. et Obs. Geo.* p. 231—234.

Eastern

Eastern Ocean, has been performed but once. According to Muller, this formidable cape was doubled in the year 1648, and the material incidents of the voyage are as follow * :

" In 1648 seven ketches or vessels sailed from the mouth of the river Kovyma †, in order to penetrate into the Eastern Ocean. Of these, four were never afterwards heard of; the remaining three were commanded by Simon Deshnef, Gerasim Ankudinof, two chiefs of the Cossacs, and Fedot Alexeef, head of the Promyshlenics. Before their departure, Deshnef and Ankudinof quarrelled; the former being unwilling that Ankudinof should share the honour, as well as the profits, of the expected discoveries. Each vessel was probably manned with about thirty persons; for Ankudinof's carried that number. Deshnef promised beforehand a tribute of seven fables, to be exacted from the inhabitants on the banks of the Anadyr; so sanguine were his hopes of reaching that river. This indeed he finally effected; but not so soon, nor with so little difficulty, as he had presumed.

On the 20th of June, 1648, the three vessels sailed on this remarkable expedition. Considering our scanty knowledge of the extreme regions of Asia, it is much to be regretted, that all the incidents of this voyage are not circumstantially related. Deshnef ‡, in an account sent to Yakutsk, seems only acci-

* I should not have swelled my book with this extract, if the English translation of Mr. Muller's work was not extremely erroneous in some material passages. S. R. G. III. p. 8—20.

† Mr. Muller calls it Kolyma.

‡ In order thoroughly to understand this narrative, it is necessary to inform the reader, that the voyage made by Deshnef was entirely forgotten until the year 1736, when Muller found, in

accidentally to hint at his adventures by sea; takes no notice of any occurrence until he reached the great promontory of the Tschutski; nor does he mention any obstruction from the ice, and probably there was none; for he observes,

in the archives of Yakutsk, the original accounts of the Russian navigations in the Frozen Ocean.

These papers were extracted under his inspection, at Yakutsk, and sent to Petersburg; where they are now preserved in the library belonging to the Imperial Academy of Sciences: they consist of several folio volumes, of which the second contains the narrative relating to Deshnef. Soliverstof and Stadukin, having laid claim to the discovery of the country on the mouth of the Anadyr, had asserted, that they arrived there by sea, after having doubled Tschukotskoi Noss. Deshnef, in answer, sent several memorials, petitions, and complaints, against Stadukin and Soliverstof, to the commander of Yakutsk, in which he allows that he had the sole right to that discovery, and refutes the arguments advanced by the others. From these memorials Muller has extracted his account of Deshnef's voyage. When I was at Petersburg, I saw these papers, and as they are written in the Russian language, prevailed on Mr. Pallas to inspect the part which relates to Deshnef. Accordingly Mr. Pallas, with his usual readiness to oblige, not only compared the memorials with Mr. Muller's account, but even took the trouble to make some extracts which are here subjoined; because they will not only serve to confirm the exactness of Muller, but also because they may tend to throw some light on several obscure passages. In one of Deshnef's memorials he says, "To go from the river Kovyma to the Anadyr, a great promontory must be doubled, which stretches very far into the sea: it is not that promontory which lies next to the river Tschukotskia. Stadukin never arrived at this great promontory: near it are two islands, whose inhabitants make holes in their under-lips, and insert therein pieces of the sea-horse tush, worked into the form of teeth. This promontory stretches between north and north-east: it is known on the Russian side by the little river Stanovie, which flows into the sea, near the spot where the Tschutski have erected a heap of whale-bones like a tower. The coast from the promontory turns round towards the Anadyr, and it is possible with a good wind to sail from the point to that river in three days and nights: and it will take up no more time to go by land to the same river, because it discharges itself into a bay." In another memorial Deshnef says, "that he was ordered to go by sea from the Indigirka to the Kovyma; and from thence with his crew to the Anadyr, which was then newly discovered. That the first time he sailed from the Kovyma, he was forced by the ice to return to that river; but that next year he again sailed from thence by sea, and after great danger, misfortunes, and with the loss of part his shipping, arrived at last at the mouth of the Anadyr. Stadukin,

P p

having

observes, on another occasion, that the sea is not every year so free from ice as it was at this time. He commences his narrative with a description of the great promontory: "It is, very different," he says, "from that which is situated west of the Kovyma, near the river Tschukotskia. It lies between north and north-east, and bends, in a circular direction towards the Anadyr. It is distinguished on the Russian (namely, the western) side by a rivulet which falls into the sea, close to which the Tschutski have raised a pile, like a tower, with the bones of whales. Opposite the promontory (it is not said on which side) are two islands; on which he observed people of the nation of the Tschutski, who had pieces of the sea horse tooth thrust into holes made in their lips. With a good wind it is possible to sail from this promontory to the Anadyr in three days; and the journey by land may be performed in the same space of time, because the Anadyr falls into a bay." Ankudinof's kotche was wrecked on this promontory, and the crew distributed on board

having in vain attempted to go by sea, afterwards ventured to pass over the chain of mountains then unknown; and reached by that means the Anadyr. Soliverstof and his party, who quarrelled with Deshnef, went to the same place from the Kovyma by land; and the tribute was afterwards sent to the last-mentioned river across the mountains, which were very dangerous to pass amidst the tribes of Koriacs and Yukagirs, who had been lately reduced by the Russians."

In another memorial Deshnef complains bitterly of Soliverstof; and asserts, "that one Severka Martemyanof, who had been gained over by Soliverstof, was sent to Yakutsk, with an account that he (Soliverstof) had discovered the coasts to the north of the Anadyr, where large numbers of sea-horses are found." Deshnef hereupon says, "that Soliverstof and Stadukin never reached the rocky promontory, which is inhabited by numerous bodies of the Tschutski; over against which are islands whose inhabitants wear artificial teeth thrust through their under lips. This is not the first promontory from the river Kovyma, called Svatoi Noss; but another far more considerable, and very well known to him (Deshnef), because the vessel of Ankudinof was wrecked there, and because he had there taken some of the people prisoners who were rowing in their boats; and seen the islanders with teeth in their lips. He also well knew, that it was still far from that promontory to the river Anadyr."

the

the remaining vessels. On the 20th of September, Deshnef and Fedot Alexeef went on shore, and had a skirmish with the Tschutski, in which Alexeef was wounded. The vessels soon afterwards lost sight of each other, and never rejoined. Deshnef was driven by tempestuous winds until October, when he was shipwrecked, as appears from circumstances, considerably to the south of the Anadyr, not far from the river Olutora. What became of Fedot Alexeef and his crew will be mentioned hereafter. Deshnef and his companions, amounting to twenty-five now fought for the Anadyr; but being entirely unacquainted with the country, ten weeks elapsed before they reached its banks at a small distance from the mouth; and here found neither wood nor inhabitants, &c.

The following year he went further up the river, built Anadirskoi Ostrog: and was joined on the 25th of April, 1650, by some Russians who came by land from the river Kovyma. In 1652, Deshnef having constructed a vessel, sailed down the Anadyr as far as its mouth, and observed on the north side a korga or sand bank, stretching a considerable way into the sea. Great numbers of sea-horses resorting to the mouth of the Anadyr, Deshnef collected several of their teeth, and thought himself amply compensated by this acquisition. In the following year, Deshnef ordered wood to be felled for the purpose of constructing a vessel, in which he proposed sending the *Arcturion* to Yakutsk*, but this design was laid aside from the want of other materials. It was also reported, that the sea about Tschukotskoi Noss was not every year free from ice.

* That is, by sea, from the mouth of the Anadyr round Tschukotskoi Noss to the river Lena, and then up that river to Yakutsk.

Another expedition was made in 1654 to the korga, or sand bank before mentioned, for the purpose of collecting sea-horse teeth. The Cossack, named Yufko Soliverstov, who not long before accompanied the Cossack Michael Stadukin, on a voyage of discovery in the Frozen Sea, was of the party. This person was sent from Yakutsk to collect sea-horse teeth, for the benefit of the crown. In his instructions mention is made of the river Yentshendon, which falls into the bay of Penzhinsk, and of the Anadyr; and he was ordered to exact a tribute from the inhabitants dwelling near these rivers; for the adventures of Deshnev were not then known at Yakutsk. This was the occasion of new discontents. Soliverstov claimed the discovery of the Korga, as if he had sailed to that place in his voyage with Stadukin in 1649. Deshnev, however, proved that Soliverstov had not even reached Tschukotskoi Noss, which he describes as nothing but bare rock, and it was but too well known to him, because the vessel of Ankudinov was shipwrecked there. "Tschukotski Noss," adds Deshnev, "is not the first promontory * which presents itself under the name of Svatoi Noss. It is known by the two islands situated opposite to it, whose inhabitants place pieces of the sea-horse tusk into holes made in their lips. Deshnev alone had seen these people,

* We may collect from Deshnev's reasoning, that Soliverstov, in endeavouring to prove he had sailed round the eastern extremity of Asia, had mistaken a promontory called Svatoi Noss for Tschukotskoi Noss: for otherwise, why should Deshnev, in his refutation of Soliverstov, begin by asserting, that Svatoi Noss was not Tschukotskoi Noss? The only cape laid down in the Russian maps, under the name of Svatoi Noss, is situated twenty-five degrees to the west of the Kovyma; but we cannot possibly suppose this to be the promontory here alluded to; because in sailing from the Kovyma towards the Anadyr, "the first promontory which presents itself," must necessarily be east of the Kovyma. Svatoi Noss, in the Russian language, signifies Sacred Promontory; and the Russians occasionally apply it to any cape, which it is difficult to double. It therefore most probably here relates to the first cape, which Soliverstov reached after he had sailed from the Kovyma.

which

which neither Stadukin nor Soliverstov pretended to have done; and the Korga, or sand-bank, at the mouth of the river Anadyr, was at some distance from these islands."

While Dethnef was surveying the sea-coast, he saw in a habitation belonging to some Koriacs, a woman of Yakutsk, who, as he recollected, belonged to Fedot Alexeef: she informed him, "that Fedot and Gerasim (Ankudinof) had died of the scurvy; that part of the crew had been slain; that a few had escaped in small vessels, and were never afterwards heard of." Traces of the vessels were afterwards found in the peninsula of Kamtchatka; at which place they probably arrived with a favourable wind, by following the coast, and running up the Kamtchatka river.

When Vladimir Atlassof, in 1697, first attempted the reduction of Kamtchatka, he found that the inhabitants had previous knowledge of the Russians. A common tradition still prevails, that, long before the expedition of Atlassof, * Fedotof (who was probably the son of Fedot Alexeef) and his companions had resided amongst them, and intermarried with the natives. They still shew the spot where the Russian habitations stood, at the mouth of the rivulet Nikul, which falls into the Kamtchatka river, and is called by the Russians Fedotika. On Atlassof's arrival none of the first Russians remained. They are said to have been held in great veneration, and almost worshipped by the inhabitants, who at first imagined that no human power could hurt them; until they fought among themselves, and the blood was seen to flow from their wounds. On a separation between the Russians, some had been killed

* Fedotof, in the Russian language, signifies the son of Fedot.

by the Koriacs, in their way to the sea of Penzhinsk, and the remainder by the Kamtchadals. The river Fedotika falls into the southern side of the Kamtchatka river about a hundred and eighty versts below Upper Kamtchatkoi Ostrog. At the time of the first expedition to Kamtchatka in 1697, the remains of two villages still subsisted, which had probably been inhabited by Fedotof and his companions; and no one knew which way they came into the peninsula, until it was discovered from the archives of Yakutsk in 1636."

* No other navigator, since Deshnef, has ever pretended to have passed the north-eastern extremity of Asia, notwithstanding all the attempts to accomplish this passage, as well from Kamtchatka, as from the Frozen Ocean.

* Mr. Engel, indeed, pretends that Lieutenant Laptieff, in 1739, doubled Tschukotskoi-Noss, because Gmelin says, that "he passed from the Kovyma to Anadirsk, partly by water and partly by land." For Mr. Engel asserts the impossibility of getting from the Kovyma to Anadirsk, partly by land and partly by water, without going from the Kovyma to the mouth of the Anadyr by sea, and from thence to Anadirsk by land. But Muller (who has given a more particular account of the conclusion of this expedition) informs us, that Laptieff and his crew, after having wintered near the Indigirka, passed from its mouth in small boats to the Kovyma; and as it was dangerous, on account of the Tschutski, to follow the coast any farther, either by land or water, he went through the interior part of the country to Anadirsk, and from thence to the mouth of the Anadyr. Gmelin Reise, vol. II. p. 440. S. R. G. III. p. 157.

Mention is also made by Gmelin of a man who passed in a small boat from the Kovyma round Tschukotskoi-Noss into the sea of Kamtchatka; and Engel has not omitted to bring this passage in support of his system; with this difference, that he refers to the authority of Muller, instead of Gmelin, for the truth of the fact. But as we have no account of this expedition, and as the manner in which it is mentioned by Gmelin implies that he had it merely from tradition, we cannot lay any stress upon such vague and uncertain reports. The passage is as follows: "Es sind so gar Spuren vorhanden, dass ein Kerl mit einem Schiffein, das nicht viel groesser als ein Schifferkahn gewesen, von Kolyma bis Tschukotski-Noss vorbei, und bis nach Kamtchatka gekommen sey." Gmelin Reise II. p. 437. Mem. et Obs. Geog. &c. p. 10.

The

The narrative of a late voyage, performed by Shalaurof, from the Lena towards Tschukotki-Nofs, will shew the great impediments which obstruct a coasting navigation in the Frozen Sea, even at the most favourable season of the year.

Shalaurof, a Russian merchant of Yakutsk, having constructed a shitik at his own expence, descended the Lena in 1761*, accompanied by an exiled midshipman, whom he found at Yakutsk, and to whom we are indebted for the chart of this expedition. Shalaurof cleared the southern mouth of the Lena in July, but was so much embarrassed by the ice, that he ran the vessel into the mouth of the Yana, where he was detained by the ice until the 29th of August. Being prevented by the ice from keeping the open sea, he coasted the shore; and having doubled Svatoi-Nofs on the 6th of September, discovered at a small distance to the north, a mountainous land, which is probably some unknown island in the Frozen Ocean. He was employed from the 7th to the 15th in passing the strait between Diomed's Island and the coast of Siberia; which he effected with great difficulty. From the 16th he had a free sea and a fair S. W. wind, which carried him in twenty-four hours beyond the mouth of the Indigirka. He passed on the 18th the Alasca. Soon afterwards, the vessel approaching too near the shore, was entangled amongst vast floating masses of ice, between islands † and the main land. In consequence
of

* According to another MS. account of Shalaurof's voyage, which I have in my possession, he is said to have set out upon this expedition in 1760; and to have been prevented by the continued drifts of floating ice, which the northerly winds drove towards the shore, from penetrating that year further than the mouth of the Yana, where he wintered. In 1761, he put to sea on the 29th of July, passed Svatoi-Nofs, &c. &c.

† These islands are Medviedkie Ostrova, or the Bear Islands; they are also called Krestofskie Ostrova, because they lie opposite the mouth of the small river Krestova. For a long time vague reports

of the lateness of the season, Shalaurof ran the vessel into one of the mouths of the Kovyma. The crew immediately constructed a hut, which they secured with a rampart of frozen snow, and a battery of small guns. Wild rein-deer resorted to this place in large herds, and were shot in great plenty from the enclosure. Before the commencement of winter, shoals of salmon and trout ascended the river, affording a plentiful subsistence, and preserving the crew from the scurvy*.

The mouth of the Kovyma was not free from ice before the 21st of July, 1762, when Shalaurof again put to sea, and steered until the 28th N. E. and N. E. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. Here he observed the variation of the compass a-shore, and found it to be $11^{\circ} 15'$ east. The 28th a contrary wind, which was followed by calm, obliged him to anchor, and kept him stationary until the 10th of August, when a favourable breeze springing up, he set sail. He then endeavoured to stand out to sea holding a more easterly course, and N. E. by E; but the vessel was impeded by large bodies of floating ice, and a strong current, which seemed to bear westward at the rate of a verst an hour. On the

reports were propagated that the continent of America stretched along the Frozen Ocean, very near the coasts of Siberia; and some persons pretended to have discovered its shore not far from the rivers Kovyma and Krestova. But the falsity of these reports was proved by an expedition made in 1764, by some Russian officers sent by Denys Ivanovitch Tschitcherin, governor of Tobolsk. These officers went in winter, when the sea was frozen, in sledges drawn by dogs, from the mouth of the Krestova. They found nothing but five small rocky islands, since called the Bear Islands, which were uninhabited; but the ruins of huts were found. They observed also on one of the islands a kind of wooden stage built of driftwood, which seemed to have been intended for defence. As far as they durst venture over the Frozen Sea, no land could be seen; but high mountains of ice obstructed their passage, and forced them to return.—See the map of this expedition upon the chart of Shalaurof's voyage.

* Raw fish are considered in those northern countries as a preservative against the scurvy.

18th, the weather being foggy, he found himself unexpectedly near the coast with a number of ice islands before him, which on the 19th surrounded and hemmed in the vessel. He remained in that situation, and in a continual fog, until the 23d, when he extricated his vessel, and endeavoured by steering N. E. to regain the open sea, which was much less clogged with ice, but was forced, by contrary winds, S. E. and E. among large masses of floating ice. This drift being passed, he again stood to the N. E. in order to double Shelatskoi-Noss*; but before he reached the islands near it, was retarded by contrary winds, and obliged, on account of the advanced season, to search for a wintering-place. He accordingly sailed south towards an open bay, which lies on the west side of Shelatskoi-Noss, and which no navigator had explored before. He entered it on the 25th, and ran on a shoal between a small island and a point of land which juts from the eastern coast of this bay. Having got clear with much difficulty, he landed to discover a spot proper for a winter residence, and found two small rivulets, but neither trees nor drift-wood. The vessel was towed along the southerly side of the bay as far as the island Sabadèi. On the 5th of September he saw some huts of the Tschutski close to the narrow channel between Sabadèi and the main land; but the inhabitants fled on his approach.

Not having found a proper situation, he stood out to sea, and got round the island Sabadèi on the 8th, when he fastened the vessel to a large body of ice, and was carried by a current W. S. W. at the rate of five versts an hour.

* He does not seem to have been deterred from proceeding by any supposed difficulty in passing Shelatskoi-Noss, but to have veered about merely on account of the late season of the year. Shelatskoi-Noss is so called from the Shelagen, a tribe of the Tschutski, and has been supposed to be the same as Tschukotski-Noss. S. R. G. III. p. 52.

On the 10th, he saw far to the N. E. by N. a mountain, and steered the 11th and 12th towards his former wintering-place in the river Kovyma.

Shalaurof proposed to make the following year another attempt to double Shelatfkoi-Nofs; but want of provision, and the mutiny of the crew, forced him to return to the Lena. It is remarkable, that during his voyage he found the currents setting almost uniformly from the east. Two remarkable rocks were observed by Shalaurof near the point where the coast turns to the N. E. towards the channel, which separates the islands Sabadèi from the continent; these rocks may serve to direct future navigators; one is called Saetshie Kamen, or Hare's Rock, and rises like a crooked horn; the other Baranèi Kamen, or Sheep's Rock; it is in the shape of a pear, narrower at the bottom than top, and rises twenty-nine yards above high-water mark.

Shalaurof, concluding from his own experience, that the attempt to double Tschukotskoi-Nofs, though difficult, was by no means impracticable, and not discouraged by his former want of success, fitted out the same vessel; and in 1764 again departed for the river Lena. We have no positive account of this second voyage; for neither Shalaurof nor any of his crew have ever returned, but are supposed to have been killed near the Anadyr by the Tschutski, the third year after their departure from the Lena. About that time the Koriacs of the Anadyr refused to take from the Russians their annual provision of flour, which they are accustomed to purchase. The governor of Anadirsk found that they had been amply supplied with that commodity by the Tschutski, who had probably procured it from the plunder of Shalaurof's vessel, the crew of which appeared to have perished near the Anadyr. From these facts, which have been since confirmed by repeated intelligence

intelligence from the Koriaes and Tschutski, it has been asserted, that Shalaurof had doubled the N. E. cape of Asia. Yet this assertion amounts only to conjecture; for the arrival of the crew even at the mouth of the Anadyr (if they ever arrived there*), affords no decisive proof that they had passed round the eastern extremity of Asia; as they might have penetrated to that river by land, from the western side of Tschukotskoi-Nofs.

* Dauerkin, the Tschutski interpreter, told Mr. Sauer, that in the autumn of 1764, Shalaurof's vessel was found drifting near the mouth of the Kovyma, and he and his crew frozen to death in a tent twenty or thirty versts east of Barannoi Kamen, with provision, ammunition, and arms. p. 97. Mr. Sauer, however, doubts the truth of this intelligence.

CHAP. 2.

Expedition of Captain Billings into the Frozen Ocean, from the Mouth of the Kovyma.

A Recent attempt, made by Captain Billings, whose voyage of discovery we have already related, has equally failed of success. Captain Billings passed the winter of 1780 at Virshni Kovimskoi Ostrog, where he built two light vessels which he called the Pallas and the Yafasknoi. At the breaking up of the ice on the 25th of May, he fell down the Kovyma, and arrived on the 20th of June at the winter huts erected by Shalaurof, near the mouth of the Kovyma.

On the 24th at noon he weighed, and with a gentle breeze steered N. N. E. into the Frozen or Northern Ocean, the depth varying from one to three fathoms; at six ice appeared near the vessel, and the wind shifting to N. by E. with a fog, cast anchor.

25. Stood towards the N. N. E.; the weather still foggy. At five P. M. quite surrounded with ice, and compelled to stand in for the shore; came to anchor in two fathoms.

27. The ice gathering about the vessel, they steered away to the west, the only passage open.

28. The

28. The ice gathering round again, cast anchor, and found themselves by observation, in latitude $69^{\circ} 27' 26''$. longitude, by time-keeper $167^{\circ} 50' 30''$.

June 1st and 2d stood to the north; but at length found themselves among thick floating islands of ice, which increafing, they bore away fouth, and loft sight of the Yafafhnoi in the fog. The rigging covered with ice. Got clear of the ice, and at noon anchored in a bay which they called Wolves' Bay. Sent three failors a-shore to make a signal-fire for the Yafafhnoi, which being perceived, that veffel rejoined the Pallas on the 4th. On the 3d the fun was vifible at midnight, and a beautiful rainbow appeared in the fouth.

On the 6th they with difficulty made their way about fourteen miles eastward, and found themselves by observation in latitude $69^{\circ} 27' 43''$, longitude $168^{\circ} 29'$.

The 7th an officer was difpatched in a boat round the next promontory, called Barannoi Kamen, to examine the ftate of the ice; but found it extend to the fhore, and the Captain himfelf walking round the promontory difcovered the report to be true.

They continued embaraffed with ice, and at length paffed Barannoi Kamen on the 19th, but the ice increafed around them, and fome parts of it were eight feet above water. In confequence of thefe difficulties, Captain Billings relinquifhed all further attempts, and on the 25th of July returned to Nizhni Kovyima.

In

In reviewing these accounts of the Russian voyages in the Frozen Sea, as far as they relate to a north-east passage, we may observe, that the cape which stretches to the north of the Piafida has never been doubled; and that the existence of a passage round Tschukotskoi-Nofs rests on the single authority of Deshnef. Admitting, however, a practicable navigation round these two promontories; yet, when we consider the difficulties and dangers which the Russians encountered in those parts of the Frozen Sea, which they have unquestionably traversed; the time they employed in making an inconsiderable progress; when we reflect, at the same time, that these voyages can only be performed in the midst of a short summer, and even then only when particular winds drive the ice into the sea, and leave the shores less obstructed, we shall reasonably conclude, that a navigation pursued along the coasts in the Frozen Ocean, would be useless for commercial purposes.

A navigation, therefore, in the Frozen Ocean, calculated to answer any end of general utility, must (if possible) be made in a higher latitude, at some distance from the shores of Nova Zemla and Siberia. And should we even grant the possibility of sailing N. E. and east of Nova Zemla, yet the final completion of a N. E. voyage must depend upon the existence of a free passage* between the coast of the Tschutski and the continent of America. But such disquisitions do not fall under the plan of this work, which is meant to state and examine facts, not to lay down an hypothesis, or to make theoretical enquiries.

* I have said a *free passage*, because if we conclude from the narrative of Deshnef's voyage, that there really does exist such a passage; yet, if that passage is only occasionally navigable (and the Russians do not pretend to have passed it more than once), it can never be of general and commercial utility.

CHAP. 3.

Attempt of Tchitschagof to discover a North-East Passage—Stopped by the Ice—Winters in Bell Sound—Endeavours to force a Passage round Spitzbergen—Returns—His remarks on this Navigation—Second Voyage.

ALL attempts to circumnavigate the northern coast of Asia having proved unsuccessful, the Russian court in 1764 ordered a voyage of discovery to be undertaken in the Frozen Ocean. It was suggested that in a high latitude the sea was more clear from ice than on the coasts; because it could not so readily accumulate in the open sea as in the vicinity of the shore, and the quantity must be diminished by the action of the sun which in those latitudes continues several months above the horizon. This opinion, though not generally adopted, was supported by men of eminence; no attempt of that nature had been made, and its impracticability could only be ascertained by actual experiment. It was determined, therefore, to send out a squadron of ships for the purpose of ascertaining the possibility of a north-east passage in the higher latitudes. They were directed to sail for the west of Greenland beyond Spitzbergen, to ascertain the position of that part of the continent, and to endeavour from thence to effect a passage into the Pacific Ocean, where they were to be joined by another squadron fitted out at Kamtchatka. If this project should succeed, they were to return to Archangel in the ensuing year, by the same passage. A temporary establishment, well supplied with the necessary stores, was to be formed on the coast of Spitzbergen, which might furnish

furnish a supply of provisions to the ships, and secure a winter's retreat to the crew in case of any unforeseen misfortune. Bell Sound on the western coast, in latitude 77°. was the spot chosen for the purpose.

In pursuance of this plan, Lieutenant Nemtinof was dispatched with six vessels laden with stores and provisions, and timber for the construction of temporary houses. He sailed from Archangel on the 6th of July, 1754, and arrived in Bell Sound the 15th of August with five vessels, the sixth having from its leaky condition, been obliged to make for the coast of Lapland. Nemtinof erected five houses, each consisting of a room and an anti-room, and having landed and secured his stores, set sail again on the 21st, leaving a lieutenant and sixteen men in the establishment. He arrived at Archangel on the 22d of September.

The following year the principal expedition took place. Three ships had been built at Archangel by James Lambe, an Englishman, who had been sent from Peterburg for that purpose: the largest of these was ninety feet long, and carried sixteen guns and seventy-four men: the others seventy-two feet long, carried each ten guns and forty-eight men; they were so constructed as to be occasionally used with oars. The command of the whole squadron was conferred upon Vassili Tchitschagof, a captain of the first rank. Tchitschagof sailed from Archangel on the 9th of May, and on the 16th came in sight of Bear's Island, where he met with the first ice, which was so thick as to prevent his approach to the shore. On this coast he beat about under contrary winds, till, by the 25th, he was enabled to steer north-west. He continued this course with variable winds, cold weather, and much snow at intervals, till the 5th of June, when his progress was impeded by solid and impenetrable ice. The five follow-

following days were spent in endeavouring to discover a passage between latitude $70^{\circ} 5'$ and $78^{\circ} 8'$, where his progress north was again stopped; but the same chain of impassible ice extended itself without interruption in the form of a vast bay, and prevented him from penetrating farther than $21^{\circ} 41'$ longitude east of Ferro by reckoning. This disappointment obliged him to return, and steering east he arrived on the 16th in Bell Sound. The preceding year Nemtikof had found no ice in the bay, but it was now so obstructed that the ships were obliged to anchor at the distance of seven versts from the shore, and their provisions were conveyed across the ice. The detachment had passed the winter without accident, and with little sickness. Having taken in nine months provision, Tschitschagof sailed again on the 3d of July, and steering north-by-west, passed twenty days in unavailing attempts to find a passage to the north or west. The same continued chain of ice-mountains encompassed them in a semicircular direction, and prevented them from penetrating beyond $79^{\circ} 8'$. This situation, during the greater part of this time was dangerous in the extreme, the ships were constantly surrounded by masses of floating ice, which by repeated friction wore through the outward planks, and they were frequently enveloped in fogs which prevented them from seeing to the distance of twenty fathoms, and exposed them to the most imminent danger of being dashed against the solid ice. No land was seen, nor was there any appearance which indicated its vicinity, as no ground could be found at one hundred and ninety fathoms.

As all hopes of discovering the continent of Greenland were now at an end, Tschitschagof directed his course to the north-west extremity of Spitzbergen, to ascertain the practicability of an eastern passage. After some obstruction from contrary winds, he repassed the north cape of Spitzbergen

on the 23d, and on the 24th at noon found himself in 80° , $26'$, the highest degree of north latitude observed this voyage. The ensuing six days were spent in beating about in constant storm and fog nearly in the same situation; little progress was made to the eastward, no longitude is marked in the journals, nor does Tschitschagof appear to have had any means of ascertaining it except by the dead-reckoning. On the 25th the cape bore S. W. by S. distant about twenty-eight miles. The ice, as usual, prevented their further progress. On the 29th Tschitschagof called a council of his officers, in which it was universally agreed that all further attempts must be fruitless, and that it would be dangerous to delay their return. The same day he steered south, on the 31st arrived off the south cape of Spitzbergen, and under a gale from the north arrived at Archangel on the 7th of the ensuing month.

The accounts collected from the masters of the Dutch whalers agree with the observations of Tschitschagof. No one had ever seen Greenland in the high northern latitudes, or had penetrated farther than between 80° and 81° . Tschitschagof calculated the variation of the compass at a point and a half west. Ryndin in Bell Sound determined it at 15° . The thermometrical observations contain nothing remarkable, as they mark, during the whole of the voyage, only a few degrees below freezing point; they appear to have been made with no great accuracy, as they differ materially in the different ships.

There is no navigation (says Tschitschagof) in which ships are exposed to more constant danger than in the Frozen Ocean, arising from the great quantity of floating ice which is driven by the winds in different directions, as well as from the continued fogs. In the year 1765, when we arrived opposite Bell Sound, we found the passage obstructed by vast shoals of ice; we endeavoured

deavoured to penetrate them, supposing that if we found the passage obstructed, we should be able to return the same way, but were soon stopped by thick impenetrable ice. Upon endeavouring to return, after failing nineteen hours in different directions between the ice, we found ourselves entirely furrounded by it, and with the greatest difficulty forced our way back into the sea. Happily for us, the wind was favourable; had we met with a single hour of storm, or contrary wind, our destruction was inevitable. After beating about some days the wind drove off the ice in a different direction, and we were enabled to reach the bay, where we remained eight days at anchor. On a sudden such vast shoals of ice were driven into the bay, that we were in hourly expectation of being crushed between the enormous masses, and preserved ourselves only by unremitting exertions during several days. In the middle of these dangers we had to contend with perpetual storms, snow, and fogs. The fogs were frequently so thick that it was impossible to see to the distance of twenty fathoms. In these cases, our only means of knowing when we were near the ice, was by listening to the dashing of the waves against it, or by firing a cannon to judge from the echo on which side it lay. But in strong winds these precautions were ineffectual, and we had no other resource but to suffer the ship to drive, and repose ourselves on the mercy of Providence. The whale-ships are less exposed to danger than we are; they are stronger built, and as they carry nothing but provision, are much lighter: the masters are acquainted with the navigation, and being restrained to no particular course, pursue that track where there appears the least danger; yet, even with these advantages, scarce a year passes but some ship perishes, and examples are not unfrequent that considerable numbers have been enclosed and crushed to pieces by the ice.

The Russian Court appears at first to have been much dissatisfied at the unexpected return of Tschitschagof, and the general failure of the expedition. The Admiralty, however, upon examination, approved the conduct of the commander and his officers, but gave it as their opinion, that the impracticability of a north-east passage had not been fully ascertained. It was accordingly determined that another expedition, consisting of the same ships and the same officers, should be sent out the ensuing year. Of this second voyage Tschitschagof upon his return delivered in the following account to the Admiralty :

" On the 19th of May," says he, " we set sail from Archangel; on the 27th were off Bears Island, where we saw ice, and directed our course for Spitzbergen. We arrived off Spitzbergen on the 30th, in longitude $26^{\circ} 31'$, latitude $77^{\circ} 23'$, but on account of the ice were unable to approach the shore. We continued our course chiefly west, with ice constantly to the north. After sailing by reckoning eighty-four miles, we fell in with the Greenland ice, which is easily known by its great thickness, its direction, and its continuance in an uninterrupted chain. We steered along this ice north-east till the 16th of June, when we anchored in latitude $78^{\circ} 10'$, longitude $17^{\circ} 53'$, but suspected an error in our reckoning, as we had been the whole time between ice. This determined us to steer east, and on the 18th we came in sight of Foreland, where we were becalmed till the 20th. On this day we were enabled to take an observation which gave $70^{\circ} 3'$. From hence we sailed with a north wind to Bell Sound. We entered the bay on the 21st, but were obliged on account of the ice to anchor five versts from the establishment. Here we found only the lieutenant, the commissary, and five soldiers: the rest being dead. Having supplied ourselves with provision and water, we set sail again

again on the 29th, but met with a strong north wind, which drove us back to the south cape. The wind changing on the 6th of July, we sailed westward in the open sea, without seeing ice, when, on the 8th of June, in latitude $77^{\circ}.48'$, longitude $18^{\circ}.53'$, by reckoning, we fell in with a thick unbroken chain of ice, stretching from S. E. to N. W. Sailing parallel to this ice, and never out of sight of it, we came on the 16th to the north end of Spitzbergen, where we found twenty sail of Dutch whale-fishers, and questioned the masters of some of these in regard to the circumstances of their voyage. From hence we worked against contrary winds, between floating ice, round the north cape of Spitzbergen, as high as latitude $80^{\circ}.30'$, constantly in sight of the great chain of ice, which at last, as we clearly perceived, united itself with the coast of Spitzbergen. In the whole of this time we neither saw Greenland, nor any northern country. From all these circumstances we concluded that there could be no passage to the north, for the ice runs from S. E. to N. W., and bending round unites itself with the land at the north end of Spitzbergen, and according to the account of the Dutch it begins under latitude 72° ."

It is remarkable, that no account of this voyage towards the north pole, which preceded several years that of Captain Phipps, was given by the Russians until it was published by Pallas in the 5th volume of the *Neue Nordische Beytraege* in 1793. Like that of the English navigator, it fully decides the impracticability of a north-east passage in a high latitude. Capt. Phipps only penetrated as high as latitude $80^{\circ}.40'$, and longitude 20° E. from Greenwich, and encountered the same obstacles as the Russians.

CHAP. 4.

Concluding Remarks on the Discoveries of Vancouver, and the Defiderata in the Geography of these Regions.

IN 1787 I published a comparative view of the Russian Discoveries, with those made by Cook and Clerk, and shewed what remained to be ascertained in the geography of those parts. Since that period the important voyage of Vancouver has ascertained the whole line of the north-western coast of America, from latitude 30°. to 62°, and the minuteness of his examination proves that no communication by sea exists between the Pacific and Atlantic oceans, in that line*. He has also elucidated and corroborated the Russian Discoveries, and proved Cook's River to be an inlet.

The

* The interesting expedition of Sir Alexander Mackenzie, proves that the rivers and lakes form an almost continued communication between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans; which at some future period may perhaps be rendered navigable.

Before the cession of Canada to the English, the merchants of that country engaged in the fur trade, had penetrated a considerable way into the interior parts of North America. Their example was followed by the British, and additional discoveries were gradually made. In 1789, Fort Chipewyan was the principal settlement to the north-west. It was situated upon the lake of the hills in latitude 50°. 40'. north, and longitude 110°. 30'. west from Greenwich. From this fort several excursions had been made, and a few dependant settlements established, but no additional discoveries of any importance.

On the 3d of June, 1789, Mr. Mackenzie, accompanied by a sufficient number of guides and attendants, embarked in a canoe at Chipewyan, with the intention of penetrating as far as possible into the interior. He passed down the Slave River to the Slave Lake, into which it discharges itself in latitude 61°. 30'. Having crossed this lake, he entered another river of considerable magni-

The only desiderata which now remain to be ascertained, are those parts towards the north, which Vancouver did not explore, and which remain in the

magnitude which flows from the north-west extremity, and has since, from the discoverer, received the name of Mackenzie's River. He descended with the current in a direction nearly north, without any impediment to about the 68°. north latitude; when the channel gradually widened into a vast lake interspersed with a variety of islands. Steering through the center of the lake, he arrived on the 10th of July at a large island in latitude 69°. 14'. north, where his farther progress was impeded by the ice, which extends itself as far as the eye could reach to the north-east. No land was visible to the north; several large fish were seen, which he imagined to be whales, and the water appeared to have a rise and fall of sixteen or eighteen inches. These circumstances led to the conclusion that the island, which he named Whale Island, must be situated in the mouth of the river at no great distance from the sea. Finding it impossible to pursue his discoveries, Mr. Mackenzie reembarked on the 16th, and ascending the river, arrived at Fort Chipewyan on the 12th of September.

On the 9th, 1793, he proceeded on a similar expedition from the most remote western settlement on the Unjigah or Peace River, in latitude 56°. 9'. north, and longitude 117°. 35'. west. He ascended this river first in a westerly, and afterwards in a southerly direction, till he arrived on the 11th of June at a small lake, in latitude 54°. 24', which he considers as its most southerly source. The canoe was here carried about a mile overland, when he embarked again on a small river, flowing on the opposite side of the heights, and shortly after uniting with another river of considerable magnitude. The course of this river he pursued, first in a westerly, and afterwards in a southerly direction, till the 22d of the same month, when he found himself in latitude 52°. 30'. Here the inhabitants of the country informed him that the course of the river as far as they were acquainted, was in a southerly direction, and that its mouth was still at a great distance. They said that there was a much nearer communication with the sea over land, and that it was about six days journey to the country of a people trading with white men, who came by sea, and from whom they procured the articles of European manufacture in their possession. This road Mr. Mackenzie determined to attempt; he began his journey on foot on the 4th of July, and after traversing a mountainous country, arrived on the 20th at an arm of the sea. Here he remained a sufficient time to take observations, by which he determined the latitude to be 52°. 20', and the longitude 128°. west of Greenwich. On the 24th of the same month, he began his journey homeward, and on the 24th of August, arrived by the same route at the fort from whence the expedition commenced.

the same uncertainty, as they were left by Cook and the Russian navigators. These are:

1. On the Asiatic coast, that region of Siberia stretching from Cape North in latitude $68^{\circ} 56'$, longitude $180^{\circ} 51'$ from Greenwich; the utmost extent of Cook's Discoveries to Cape Pafafnoi, the limit of Billing's voyage to the east of the Kovyma in the Frozen Ocean. From the imperfect chart given by Schalaurof, it is doubtful whether the continent extends so far to the north as the promontory he has called Shelatfkoï-Nofs; because the direct distance between these two points is little more than two hundred English miles.

2. The shore of the opposite coast of America, between Shoal-Nofs, latitude 60° , longitude $198^{\circ} 10'$ from Greenwich, and point Shallow Water, latitude 68° , and longitude 198° , is also entirely undescribed; and what renders this coast an interesting subject of inquiry is the inference of Captain Cook, that considerable river here runs from the continent into the sea.

To the north of Beering's Straits, the land of America from Point Mulgrave

N. B. The tract of country which lies between the Great Slave Lake and the Northern Ocean, was first traversed by Mr. Hearne in 1771, who arrived at the sea in latitude 69° north. Mr. Mackenzie traversed the same country in a more westerly direction, and from his account it is apparent that the sea does not extend so far as $69^{\circ} 14'$. The accounts of these travellers therefore mutually confirm each other, and there cannot be the slightest doubt of their accuracy. From the Great Slave Lake to Lake Superior, and the sources of the Mississippi, the country is well known, and the whole course of that river is equally so. From hence it is fully demonstrated, that no north-west passage can exist between 69° of latitude and the gulph of Mexico. That there exists some passage to the north of 69° is very possible, though it is still uncertain in what latitude; but it is evident that any passage in that latitude must be impracticable, on account of the ice.

in

in latitude $67^{\circ}.45'$, longitude $194^{\circ}.51'$ from Greenwich, to Icy Cape, in latitude $70^{\circ}.29'$, longitude $198^{\circ}.20'$, where Cook was stopped by the ice, was not, excepting a small portion near Cape Lisburne, and another to the south of that promontory, observed neither by Cook or Clerke; and its true bearings must be ascertained by future navigators. But the most important points of further enquiry is to trace the direction of the American continent from Icy Cape; whether it again trends to the north-west, and according to the reports of the Tschutski, approaches the coasts of northern Siberia, or verges directly to the east towards Baffin's Bay.

The execution of such an undertaking in such distant regions, and in so high a latitude must necessarily be attended with expence, difficulty, and hazard. For the points of distance between Icy Cape and the north-western extremity of Baffin's Bay, include a space of no less than twenty-one degrees of longitude, of which only two points have been ascertained by Hearne and Mackenzie.

It must nevertheless be admitted that such inquiries, however interesting, to increase our knowledge of the globe, do not tend to throw any new light on the practicability of a north-east passage, which has been disproved by the obstacles and difficulties encountered by the Russians in navigating the Frozen Ocean, and more particularly by the undoubted testimony of Cook himself.

3. In regard to the new-discovered islands, as Cook only observed a few, the position and description of the remainder are to be drawn from the Russian accounts, in which it cannot be denied that the names are frequently cor-

S s

rupted,

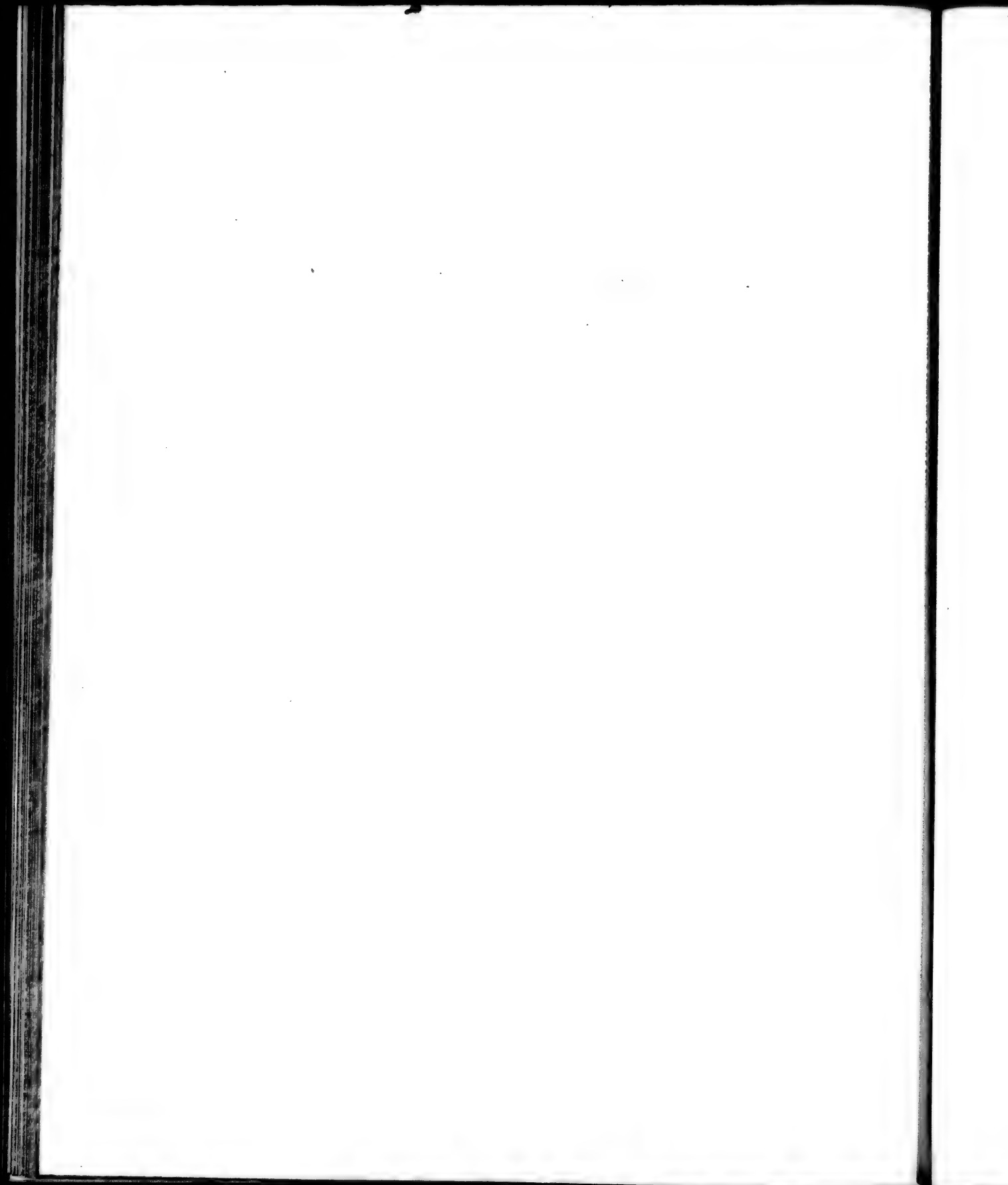
rupted, the number increased, and the position mistaken. Nor can this be an object of wonder, when we consider that these voyages were mostly performed by ignorant traders, merely for the sake of furs, and not with a view for discovery. Nor must it be omitted that the expeditions of Beering and Krenitzin have added to the knowledge of these regions.

In this respect the voyage of Billings has indeed ascertained the position of many of these islands, but still much remains to be explored, as this part of the ocean seems to be thickly interspersed with islands, many of which have probably never been visited.

The particulars which remain to be ascertained with respect to the new-discovered islands, are to remove the uncertainty arising from the confusion of names to determine the true number, and fix their latitudes and longitudes.

These are the principal objects of examination on the coasts of Asia and America, and in respect to the new-discovered islands; and it is to be hoped that these points will be ascertained under the auspices of the sovereign who now fills the Russian throne, and who emulates the glorious example of Catherine the Second.

P A R T II.
CONTAINING
THE CONQUEST OF SIBERIA;
AND
THE HISTORY
OF THE
TRANSACTIONS AND COMMERCE
BETWEEN
RUSSIA AND CHINA.



CONQUEST OF SIBERIA.

CHAP. 1.

*Irruptions of the Russians into Siberia—Exploits and Progress of Yermac—
Defeats Kutchum Chan—Conquers his Dominions—Receives a Reinforcement
of Russian Troops—His Defeat and Death—Veneration paid to his Memory
—Russian Troops evacuate Siberia—Re-enter and conquer the whole Country
—Their Progress stopped by the Chinese.*

SIBERIA was scarcely known to the Russians before the middle of the sixteenth century*: for although an expedition was made under the reign of Ivan Vassilievitch I. into the north-western parts to the river Oby, by which several Tartar tribes were rendered tributary, and some of their chiefs brought prisoners to Moscow; yet this incursion was scarcely more than a desultory inroad. Indeed, the effects of that expedition soon vanished, nor does any trace of subsequent communication with Siberia appear in the Russian history before the reign of Ivan Vassilievitch II. At that period Siberia again became an object of attention, by means of Anika Strogonof, a Russian merchant, who had established some salt-works at Solvytshgodfskaia, a town in the government of Archangel.

* S. R. G. VI. p. 119—211. Fis. Sib. Ges. tom. I.

Strogonof

Strogonof carried on a trade of barter with the inhabitants of the north-western parts of Siberia, who brought every year large quantities of the choicest furs. Upon their return to their country, he was accustomed to send with them some Russian factors, who crossed the mountains, and traded with the natives. By these means valuable furs were procured in exchange for toys and other trifles. This traffic was continued for several years, and Strogonof rapidly amassed a considerable fortune*. At length Ivan Vassilievitch II. appreciated the advantages of a more regular commerce, and with a view to open the communication with Siberia, he sent a body of troops into the country. They followed the route of the Russians in the former expedition; and lately frequented by the factors of Solvytshgodskaja. It lay along the banks of the Petschora, and crossed the Yugorian mountains, which form the north-eastern boundary of Europe. These troops, however, do not seem to have passed the Irtysh, or penetrated further than the western branch of the river Oby. Some Tartar tribes were indeed laid under contribution, and a chief, whose name was Yediger, consented to pay an annual tribute of one thousand fables. But this expedition was not productive of any lasting advantage, for soon afterwards Yediger was defeated, and taken prisoner by Kutchum Chan, a lineal descendant of the celebrated Zinghis Chan, who had newly established his empire in those parts.

This second inroad was probably made about the middle of the sixteenth century; for the Tzar Ivan Vassilievitch assumed the title of Lord of all the Siberian lands as early as 1558, before the conquests of Yermac †.

* S. R. G. VI. p. 200—223. *Fis. Sib. Ges.* p. 182.

† S. R. G. VI. p. 217.

But

But the name of Siberia was, perhaps, at that time confined to the district then rendered tributary; and as the Russians enlarged their conquests, was extended to the whole tract of country which now bears that name.

For some time after this second expedition, the Tzar made no attempts towards recovering his authority in so remote a country; but his attention was attracted by a concurrence of incidents, which, though begun without his immediate interposition, terminated in a vast accession of territory.

Strogonof, in recompence for first opening a trade with the inhabitants of Siberia, obtained from the Tzar large grants of land. He founded colonies on the bank of the rivers Kama and Tchuffovaia; and these settlements gave rise to the entire subjection of Siberia by the refuge which they afforded to Yermac Timofeef, a fugitive Cossack of the Don, and chief of some banditti who infested the shores of the Caspian Sea.

By the victories of the Tzar Ivan Vassilievitch over the Tartars of Casan and Astracan, that monarch extended his dominions to the Caspian Sea, and established a commerce with the Persians and Bucharians. But as the merchants were continually pillaged by the Cossacks, and as the roads which lay by the side of the Don and the Volga, were infested with banditti, the Tzar sent a considerable force to subdue them. They were attacked and routed; part were slain, part made prisoners, and the rest escaped by flight; among the latter was a corps of six thousand Cossacks, under the command of Yermac Timofeef*.

* S. R. G. VI. p. 232. Fis. Sib. Ges. I. p. 185.

This celebrated adventurer, being driven from his haunts, retired with his followers into the interior of Casan, and directed his course along the banks of the Kama, until he reached Orel*, one of the new Russian settlements, governed by Maxim, grandson of Anika Strogonof. Instead of storming the place, and pillaging the inhabitants, Yermac acted with a degree of moderation unusual in a chief of banditti. Being hospitably received by Strogonof, and supplied with necessaries for the subsistence of his troops, he peaceably fixed his winter quarters at that settlement. His restless genius, however, did not suffer him to continue in a state of inactivity; and, from the intelligence he procured concerning the situation of the neighbouring Tartars of Siberia, he turned his arms toward that quarter.

Siberia was then partly divided among a number of separate princes, and partly inhabited by the various tribes of independent Tartars. Of the former, Kutchum Chan the most powerful, was sovereign of that tract of country which now forms the south-western part of the province of Tobolsk, and stretches from the banks of the Irtysh and Oby to those of the Tobol and Tura. His principal residence was at Sibir, a fortress upon the river Irtysh, near the present town of Tobolsk. Although his power was very considerable; yet some circumstances seemed to ensure success to an enterprising invader. He had newly acquired a large part of his territories by conquest, and alienated the affections of his idolatrous subjects by the intolerant zeal with which he disseminated the Mahometan religion †.

Strogonof displayed to Yermac this inviting prospect, as well with a view

* S. R. G. VI. p. 233.

† S. R. G. VI. p. 180.

of removing him from his present station, as because he himself was personally exasperated against Kutchum Chan, who had secretly instigated a body of Tartars to invade the Russian settlements upon the river Tchussovaia, and had afterwards commenced open hostilities with a body of forces under the command of his cousin Mehemet Kul. Both these attempts had failed of success; yet they left traces of havoc and devastation too deep to be effaced*.

These various considerations were not lost on Yermac: having, therefore, employed the winter in preparations, he began his march in the summer of the following year, 1578, along the banks of the Tchussovaia. The want of proper guides, and a neglect of other necessary precautions, greatly retarded his march; he was overtaken by the winter before he had made any considerable progress, and at the approach of spring, found his stock of provisions so nearly exhausted, that he was reduced to the necessity of returning to Orel. This failure, instead of extinguishing his ardour, only served to render him still more active in guarding against a future miscarriage. By threats he extorted from Strogonof every assistance which the nature of the expedition seemed to require. Besides a sufficient quantity of provisions, the greater part of his followers, who were before unprovided with fire-arms, were supplied with muskets and ammunition; and colours were distributed to each company, which were ornamented with the images of saints, after the manner of the Russians.

Having thus made all previous arrangements, he found himself in a condition to force his way into Siberia; and in the month of June, 1579, com-

* *Fis. Sib. Ges. I. p. 187.*

menced his second expedition. His followers amounted to five thousand men; adventurers inured to hardships, and regardless of danger, who placed implicit confidence in their leader, and were all animated with the same spirit. He continued his route partly by land, and partly by water; but the navigation of the rivers was so tedious, and the roads so rugged and difficult, that eighteen months elapsed before he reached Tchingi, a small town on the banks of the Tura*. Here he mustered his troops, and found his army considerably reduced by fatigue and sickness, and continual skirmishes with the Tartars. The remaining number amounted to no more than fifteen hundred effective men; and yet with this handful of troops Yermac did not hesitate to advance against Kutchum Chan. That prince was already upon his guard; and resolved to defend his crown to the last extremity. He dispatched several flying parties against Yermac, himself remaining behind with the flower of his forces; but all his detachments were repulsed with considerable loss; and worsted in successive encounters. Yermac continued his march without intermission, bearing down all resistance, until he reached the centre of his adversary's dominions.

These successes, however, were dearly bought; for his army was now reduced to five hundred men. Kutchum Chan was encamped† at no great distance on the banks of the Irtysh, with a superior force, and determined to give battle. Yermac, not daunted by inequality of numbers, prepared for engagement, with a confidence which never forsook him; his troops were

* S. R. G. VI. p. 243—248—262.

† The place where the Tartar army lay encamped was called Tschuvatch; it is a neck of land washed by the Irtysh, near the spot where the Tobol falls into that river.—*Fis. Sib. Ges. I.* p. 203.

equally

equally impatient for action, and knew no medium between conquest and death. The event of the combat corresponded with his magnanimity. After an obstinate and well-fought battle, victory declared in favour of Yermac; the Tartars were entirely routed; and Kutsum Chan with difficulty escaped.

This defeat proved decisive: Kutsum Chan was deserted by his subjects, and Yermac, who knew how to improve as well as gain a victory, marched without delay to Sibir, the residence of the Tartar princes. Being well aware, that the only method to secure his conquest was to obtain possession of that important fortress, he expected to be opposed by a considerable garrison, determined to sacrifice their lives in its defence. But the news of the late defeat had diffused universal consternation; and a body of troops whom he dispatched to reduce the fortress, finding it deserted, Yermac made his triumphant entry, and seated himself on the throne without further opposition. Here he fixed his residence, and received the allegiance of the neighbouring people, who flocked from all quarters upon the news of this unexpected revolution. The Tartars, struck with his intrepidity and brilliant exploits, submitted to his authority without hesitation, and acquiesced in the payment of the usual tribute.

Thus this enterprising Cossack was suddenly exalted, from a chief of banditti, to the rank of a sovereign prince. But, whatever were his original projects, his intrepidity and prudence deserved the success which flowed in upon him; for he was neither elated with unexpected prosperity, or dazzled with the sudden glare of royalty; on the contrary, the dignity of his deportment was as consistent and unaffected, as if he had been born to sovereignty.

T t 2

Yermac

Yermac and his followers seemed to enjoy those rewards which they had dearly purchased by a course of unremitted fatigue, and by victories which almost exceeded belief. Not only the tribes in the neighbourhood of Sibir wore the appearance of undiffembled submission; but even princes from the most distant parts acknowledged themselves tributary, and claimed his protection. This calm, however, was of short duration. Insurrections were fomented by Kutchum Chan; who, though driven from his dominions, still retained great influence over his former subjects.

Yermac saw and felt the precariousness of his present grandeur: the inconsiderable number of his followers, who had survived the conquest of Sibir, were still further diminished by an ambuscade of the enemy; and, as he could not depend upon the affection of his new subjects, he found himself under the necessity either of calling in foreign assistance, or relinquishing his conquests. Under these circumstances he had recourse to the Tzar of Muscovy, and made a tender of his new acquisitions on condition of receiving immediate and effectual support.

One of his confidential followers was dispatched to Moscow at the head of fifty Cossacs. He represented the progress of the Russian troops, under the command of Yermac in Siberia, and artfully added, that an extensive empire was conquered in the name of the Tzar; that the natives were reduced to swear allegiance to that monarch, and consented to pay an annual tribute. This representation was accompanied with a present of the choicest and most valuable furs*. The ambassador was received at Moscow with the strongest

* S. R. G. VI. p. 304.

marks of satisfaction ; a public thanksgiving was celebrated in the cathedral ; the Tzar extolled the services of Yermac ; he granted a pardon for all former offences ; and, as a testimony of royal favour, distributed presents for him and his followers. Among those sent to Yermac was a fur robe, which the Tzar himself had worn, and which was the greatest mark of distinction that could be conferred on a subject. To these was added a sum of money, and a promise of speedy and effectual assistance.

Meanwhile, Yermac, notwithstanding the inferiority of his troops, did not remain inactive within the fortrefs of Sibir. He defeated all the attempts of Kutchum Chan to recover his crown, and took his principal general prisoner ; he made occasional inroads into the adjacent provinces, and extended his conquests to the source of the Tassda on one side, and on the other as far as the district which lies on the Oby above its junction with the Irtysh.

At length the promised succours arrived at Sibir. They consisted of five hundred Russians, under the command of prince Bolkosky, who was appointed wayvode or governor of Siberia. Strengthened by this reinforcement, Yermac continued his excursions on all sides with his usual activity, and gained several bloody victories over different princes, who imprudently asserted their independence.

In one of these expeditions he laid siege to Kullara, a small fortrefs on the banks of the Irtysh, but found it so bravely defended by Kutchum Chan, that all his efforts to carry it by storm proved ineffectual. On his return to Sibir he was followed at some distance by that prince, who hung unperceived upon his rear, and was prepared to seize any fortunate moment which might occur ;

occur: nor was it long before a favourable opportunity presented itself. The Russians, to the number of three hundred, were negligently posted in a small island, formed by two branches of the Irtysh. The night was dark and rainy, and the troops fatigued with a long march, reposed themselves without suspicion of danger. Kutchum Chan, apprised of their situation, advanced at midnight with a select body of men, and, having forded the river, came with such rapidity on the Russians, as to preclude the use of their arms. In the confusion they were cut to pieces almost without opposition, and fell a resistanceless prey to those adversaries, whom they had been accustomed to conquer and despise. The massacre was so universal, that only one man is recorded to have escaped, and to have brought the news of this catastrophe to his countrymen at Sibir.

Yermac perished in the route, though he did not fall by the sword of the enemy. In the hurry of surprise, he exerted his usual intrepidity, which seemed to be increased rather than abated by the danger of his situation. After many desperate acts of heroism, he forced his way through the surrounding troops, to the banks of the Irtysh*. Being closely pursued by a detachment of the enemy, he endeavoured to throw himself into a boat which lay near the shore; but stepping short, fell into the water, and, incumbered with the weight of his armour, instantly sunk and was drowned†.

His

* Many difficulties have arisen concerning the branch of the Irtysh in which Yermac was drowned; but it is now sufficiently ascertained that it was a canal which had been cut by his own order. Not far from the spot where the Vagai falls into the Irtysh, the latter river forms a bend of six versts; by cutting a canal in a straight line from the two extreme points of this sweep, he shortened the length of the navigation. S. R. G. p. 365, 366.

† Cyprian was appointed the first archbishop of Siberia in 1621. On his arrival at Tobolsk, he

His body was exposed, by order of Kutchum Chan, to all the insults, which revenge ever suggested to barbarians in the frenzy of success. But these first transports of resentment had no sooner subsided, than the Tartars testified the greatest indignation at the ungenerous ferocity of their leader. The prowess of Yermac, his consummate valour and magnanimity, virtues which barbarians know how to prize, rose upon their recollection. By a transition from one extreme to the other, they reproached their leader for ordering, and themselves for being the instruments of indignity to his remains. At length their heated imaginations proceeded even to consecrate his memory; they interred his body with all the rites of Pagan superstition, and offered sacrifices to his manes.

Many miraculous stories were soon spread and implicitly believed. The touch of his body was supposed an instantaneous cure for all disorders; and even his clothes and arms were said to be endowed with the same efficacy. A flame of fire was represented as sometimes hovering about his tomb, and sometimes stretching in a luminous body towards the heavens. A presiding influence over the affairs of the chase and of war was attributed to his departed spirit, and numbers resorted to his tomb to invoke his tutelary aid in concerns so interesting to uncivilized nations. These idle fables, while they prove the superstitious credulity of the Tartars, convey the strongest testimony

he enquired for several followers of Yermac who were still alive; and from them made himself acquainted with the principal circumstances attending his expedition and the conquest of Siberia. These circumstances he committed to writing; and these papers may be considered as the archives of the Siberian history; from which the several historians of that country have drawn their relations. Sava Yesimof, who was himself one of Yermac's followers, is one of the most accurate historians of those times. He carries down his history to the year 1636. —Fes, Sib. Ges, I. p. 430.

of

of their veneration for the memory of Yermac; and this veneration greatly contributed to the subsequent progress of the Russian arms *.

With Yermac expired for a time the Russian empire in Siberia. The news of his defeat and death no sooner reached the garrison of Sibir, than a hundred and fifty troops, the sad remains of that small but formidable body which had gained such incredible victories, retired from the fortrefs, and evacuated Siberia. Notwithstanding this disaster, the court of Moscow did not abandon its design on that country, which a variety of favourable circumstances still concurred to render a flattering object of Russian ambition. Yermac's sagacity had discovered new and commodious routes for the march of troops across those inhospitable regions, and the rapidity with which he overran the territories of Kutchum Chan, taught the Russians to consider the Tartars as an easy prey. Many of the tribes, rendered tributary by Yermac, had testified a chearful acquiescence under the sovereignty of the Tzar, and were inclined to renew their allegiance upon the first opportunity: others looked upon all resistance as unavailing; and learned, from dear-bought experience, to tremble at the very name of a Russian. The natural strength of the country, which was proved not to be irresistible, even when united, became considerably weakened by its intestine commotions. On the retreat of the Russian garrison, Sibir together with the adjacent district, was seized by Seyidyak, son of the former sovereign, whom Kutchum Chan had dethroned and put to death;

* Even so late as the middle of the next century, this veneration for the memory of Yermac had not subsided. Allai, a powerful prince of the Calmucs, is said to have been cured of a dangerous disorder, by mixing some earth taken from Yermac's tomb in water, and drinking the infusion. The same prince is also reported to have carried with him a small portion of the same earth, whenever he engaged in any important enterprize. This earth he superstitiously considered as a kind of talisman to secure success.—S. R. G. VI. p. 391.

other princes availed themselves of the general confusion to assert their independence, and Kutchum Chan was able to regain only a small portion of those dominions, of which he had been stripped by Yermac.

In consequence of these favourable circumstances, the court of Moscow dispatched a body of three hundred troops into Siberia, who penetrated to the banks of the Tura as far as Tfchingi, almost without opposition, and having built the fort of Tumen, re-established their authority over the neighbouring district. Being soon afterwards reinforced, they were enabled to extend their operations, and to erect the fortresses of Tobolsk, Sirgut, and Tara. The construction of these and other fortresses was attended with a speedy recovery of the whole territory, which Yermac had reduced under the Russian yoke.

This success was the fore-runner of still greater acquisitions. The Russians rapidly extended their conquests : wherever they appeared, the Tartars were either reduced or exterminated ; new towns were built and colonies planted. Before a century had elapsed, that vast tract of country now called Siberia which stretches from the confines of Europe to the Eastern Ocean, and from the Frozen Sea to the frontiers of China, was annexed to the Russian dominions. A still larger extent of territory might probably have been gained, and all the various tribes of independent Tartary, which lie between the southern extremity of the Russian empire and the Chinese Wall, would have experienced the fate of the Siberian hordes, had not the power of China suddenly interposed.

TRANSACTIONS
BETWEEN
RUSSIA AND CHINA.

CHAP. 2.

Commencement of Hostilities between the Russians and Chinese—Disputes concerning the Limits of the two Empires—Treaty of Nerzhinsk—Embassies from the Court of Russia to Pekin—Treaty of Kiakta—Establishment of the commercial Intercourse between the two Nations.

TOWARDS the middle of the seventeenth century the Russians rapidly extending themselves eastward on both sides of the * Amoor, reduced several independent Tungusian hordes; and built a chain of small fortresses along the banks of the river, of which the principal were Albazin, and Kam-

* Amoor is the name given by the Russians to this river; it is called Sakalin-Ula by the Manchus, and was formerly denominated Karamuran, or the Black River, by the Mongols. S. R. G. II. p. 293.

arskoi Ostrog. Not long afterwards, the Chinese under * Camhi, conceived a similar design of subduing the same hordes. Accordingly the two great powers of Russia and China, thus pointing their views to the same object, unavoidably clashed; and, after much jealousy and intrigue, broke into open hostilities about the year 1680. The Chinese laid siege to Kamaraskoi Ostrog; and, though repulsed, cut off several straggling parties of Russians. These animosities induced the Tzar Alexey Michaelovitch to send an embassy to Peking; a measure, which did not produce the cessation of hostilities. The Chinese attacked Albafin with a considerable force; having compelled the Russian garrison to capitulate, they demolished that and all the Russian forts upon the Amoor, and returned with many prisoners, to their own country.

Not long after their departure, a body of sixteen hundred Russians advanced along the Amoor, and constructed a new fort, under the old name of Albafin. The Chinese apprised of their return, marched without delay, and laid siege to Albafin with an army of seven thousand men, and a large train of artillery.

* Camhi was the second emperor of the Manshur race, who made themselves masters of China in 1624.

The Manchurs were originally an obscure tribe of the Tungusian Tartars, whose territories lay south of the Amoor, and bordered on the kingdom of Corea, and the province of Leaotung. They began to emerge from obscurity at the beginning of the seventeenth century. About that time, their chief Aischin-Giord reduced several neighbouring hordes; and, having incorporated them with his own tribe, under the general name of Manchur, he became formidable even to the Chinese. Shuntschi, grandson of this chief, by an extraordinary concurrence of circumstances, was raised while an infant to the throne of China, of which his successors still continue in possession. Shuntschi died in 1662, and was succeeded by Camhi, who is well known from the accounts of the Jesuit missionaries.

For an account of the revolution of China, see Duhalde *Descr. de la Chine*, Bell's *Journey to Peking*, and *Fis. Sib. Ges.* tom. I. p. 463.

U u 2

They

They battered the new fortrefs several weeks, without making a breach, attempting to take it by ftorm. The befieged, though not much annoyed by the unskilful operations of the enemy, were exhausted with ficknefs and famine; and, notwithstanding a gallant refiftance, muft soon have funk under their diftreffes had not the Chinefe retired, in confequence of a treaty in agitation between the two courts of Mofcow and Peking. The Ruffian embaffador Golovin had quitted Mofcow in 1685, accompanied by a body of troops, in order to fecure his perfon, and enforce refpect to his embaffy. The difficulty of procuring fubfiftence for any confiderable number of men in fuch defolate regions, joined to the ruggednefs of the roads, and the length of the march, prevented his arrival at Selenginfk until 1687. From thence meffengers were immediately difpatched to Peking, with overtures of peace.

After feveral delays, occafioned by policy, and by the pofture of affairs in the Tartar country through which the Chinefe were to pafs, embaffadors left Peking in the beginning of June 1689. Golovin propofed to receive them at Albafin; but, while he was proceeding to that fortrefs, the Chinefe embaffadors prefented themfelves at the gates of Nerfhinfk, eforted by fuch a numerous army, and fuch a formidable train of artillery, that Golovin was compelled to conclude the negotiation almoft upon their own terms. The conferences were held under tents, in an open plain, near the town of Nerfhinfk; and a treaty concluded, which firft checked the progrefs of the Ruffian arms, and laid the foundations of an important and regular commerce between the two nations. By the firft and fecond articles, the fouth-eaftern boundaries of the Ruffian empire were formed by a ridge of mountains, ftretching north of the Amoor from the fea of Okotfk to the fource of the
fmall

small river Gorbitza*, then by that river to its influx into the Amoor; and lastly, by the Argoon, from its junction with the Shilka up to its source. By the fifth article reciprocal liberty of trade was granted to all the subjects of the two empires, who should be provided with passports from their respective courts †.

This treaty was signed on the 27th of August, in the year 1689, in the reign of Ivan and Peter Alexiewitch, by which the Russians lost, not only a considerable territory, but the navigation of the Amoor. The importance of this was not at that time known; and has only been appreciated since the discovery of Kamtchatka, and of the islands between Asia and America. The productions of these new-discovered countries might, by means of the Amoor, have been conveyed by water into the district of Nerzhinsk, from whence there is an easy transport by land to Kiakta: whereas the same merchandise, after being landed at Okotsk, is now carried over a large tract of country, partly on rivers of difficult navigation, and partly along rugged and almost impassable roads.

In return, the Russians obtained, what they had long and repeatedly desired,

* There are two Gorbitzas; the first falls into the Amoor, near the conflux of the Argoon and Shilka; the second falls into the Shilka. The former was meant by the Russians; but the Chinese fixed on the latter, for the boundary, and have carried their point. Accordingly the present limits are somewhat different from those mentioned in the text. They are carried from the point where the Shilka and Argoon unite to form the Amoor, westward along the Shilka, until they reach the mouth of the western Gorbitza; from whence they are continued to the source of the last mentioned river, and along the chain of mountains as before. By this alteration the Russian limits are somewhat abridged.

† S. R. C. II. p. 435.

a regular and permanent trade with the Chinese. The first intercourse between Russia and China commenced in the beginning of the seventeenth century*; at which period a small quantity of Chinese commodities was procured, by the merchants of Tomsk and other adjacent towns, from the Calmucs. The rapid and profitable sale of these commodities encouraged certain way vodes of Siberia to attempt a direct communication with China. For this purpose several persons were deputed at different times to Pekin from Tobolsk, Tomsk, and other Russian settlements; and although these deputations failed of obtaining the grant of a regular commerce, they were nevertheless attended with some important consequences. The good reception of these agents tempted the Russian merchants to send occasional traders to Pekin. By these means a faint connection with that metropolis was preserved; the Chinese learned the advantages of the Russian trade, and were gradually prepared for its subsequent establishment. This commerce, carried on at intervals, was entirely suspended by the hostilities upon the river Amoor; but no sooner was the treaty of Nerzhinsk concluded, than the Russians engaged with extraordinary alacrity in their favourite branch of traffic. To improve these advantages, Peter I. dispatched in 1692, Isbrand Ives, a Dutchman in his service, to Pekin; who obtained the extension of that liberty of trade to caravans, which by the late treaty had been restricted to individuals.

In consequence of this arrangement, successive caravans went from Russia to Pekin; a caravanfary was allotted for their reception, and all expences during their continuance in that metropolis were defrayed by the

* S. R. G. VIII. p. 503, & seq.

Emperor of China. The right of sending these caravans, and the profits resulting from them, belonged to the crown of Russia. In the mean time, private merchants continued as before to carry on a separate trade with the Chinese, not only at Peking, but also at the head quarters of the Mongols. The camp of these roving Tartars was generally stationed near the conflux of the Orkon and Tola, between the Southern frontiers of Siberia and the Mongol desert. A kind of annual fair was here held, where the Russian and Chinese merchants brought their respective goods for sale. But this rendezvous soon became a scene of riot and confusion; and repeated complaints of the drunkenness and misconduct of the Russians were transmitted to the Emperor of China. The complaints thus presented made a still greater impression from a coincidence of similar excesses, for which the Russians at Peking had become notorious. Exasperated by the frequent representations of his subjects, Camhi threatened to expel the Russians from his dominions, and prohibit them from carrying on any commerce, as well in China as in the country of the Mongols.

These untoward circumstances occasioned another embassy to Peking in the year 1719. Leff Vassilievitch Ismailof, the Russian ambassador succeeded in the negotiation; and adjusted every difficulty to the satisfaction of both parties. At his departure, Laurence Lange, who accompanied him in the character of agent for the caravans, was permitted to remain at Peking for the purpose of superintending the conduct of the Russians. His residence, however, in that metropolis was short; for he was soon afterwards compelled by the Chinese, to return. His dismissal was owing partly to the caprice of that suspicious people; and partly to a misunderstanding between the two courts, relative to some Mongol tribes who bordered upon Siberia. Some

of

of these Mongols had placed themselves under the protection of Russia, and were immediately demanded by the Chinese; but the Russians refused compliance, under pretence that no article in the treaty of Nerzhinsk could be construed as extending to the Mongols. The Chinese were incensed at this refusal; and their resentment was still farther inflamed by the disorderly conduct of the Russian traders, who, freed from all controul by the departure of their agent, indulged, without restraint, their propensity to excess. This concurrence of unlucky incidents extorted in 1722, an order from Camhi for their total expulsion from the Chinese and Mongol territories, and all intercourse between the two nations immediately ceased.

Affairs continued in this state until the year 1727; when Count Sava Vladislavitch Raguzinski, a Dalmatian in the service of Russia, was dispatched to Peking. He was instructed at all events to adjust the differences between the two courts relating to the Mongol tribes, to settle the southern frontiers of the Russian empire, and to obtain the renewal of the trade with China. He accordingly presented to Yundschin, son and successor of Camhi, a new plan for a treaty of limits and commerce, by which the frontiers of the two empires were settled; and the commerce established on a permanent basis, calculated to prevent as far as possible, future misunderstanding. This plan being approved by the emperor, Chinese commissioners were appointed to negotiate with the Russian ambassador on the banks of the Bura, a small river which flows south of the confines of Siberia into the Orgon near its junction with the Selenga.

At this conference, the old limits, settled by the treaty of Nerzhinsk, were continued near the source of the Argoon westwards, as far as the mountain Sabyntaban, situated at a small distance from the spot where the conflux of
the

the two rivers Uleken and Kemtzak form the Yeniseï; this boundary separates the Russian dominions from the territory of the Mongols, who are under the protection of China. It was also stipulated, that for the future all negotiations should be transacted between the tribunal for foreign affairs at Pekin, and the board of foreign affairs at St. Petersburg; or in matters of inferior moment between the two commanders of the frontiers*.

The most important articles relating to commerce were as follow:

A Russian caravan, not exceeding two hundred persons, was allowed to go to Pekin every three years, and during their residence in that metropolis, their expences were to be defrayed by the Emperor of China. Notice was also to be sent to the Chinese court immediately upon their arrival at the frontiers; where an officer was to meet and accompany them to Pekin. The privilege before enjoyed by individuals, of carrying on a promiscuous traffic in the Chinese and Mongol territories, was abolished, and no merchandize belonging to private persons was permitted to be brought for sale beyond the frontiers. For the purpose of preserving, consistently with this regulation, the privilege of commerce to individuals, two places of resort were appointed on the confines of Siberia: one called Kiakta, from a rivulet of that name near which it stands; and the other Zurukaitu; at which places the subjects of the two nations were indulged with a free trade. A permission was at the same time obtained for building a Russian church within the precincts of their caravanfary; and, for the celebration of Divine Service, four priests were

* This article was inserted, because the Chinese Emperor, from an idea of superiority, had contemptuously refused to hold any correspondence with the Court of Russia.

allowed to reside at Pekin*. The same favour was extended to some Russian scholars † for the purpose of learning the Chinese tongue, to qualify themselves for interpreters between the two nations.

This treaty, called the treaty of Kiakta, was, on the 14th of June, 1728, ratified by count Raguzinski and three Chinese plenipotentiaries on the spot where Kiakta was afterwards built, and forms the basis of all the subsequent transactions between Russia and China‡.

An innovation in the mode of carrying on the trade to China, since the accession of Catherine II. deserves to be mentioned. Since 1755 no caravans have been sent to Pekin. They were first discontinued on account of a misunderstanding between the courts of Petersburg and Pekin; and their disuse, after a reconciliation had taken place, arose from the following cir-

* The first Russian church at Pekin was built for the accommodation of the Russians taken prisoners at Albasin. These persons were carried to Pekin, and the place appointed for their habitation in that city was called the Russian Street, a name it still retains. They were so well received by the Chinese, that, on the conclusion of the treaty of Nerzhinsk, they refused to return to their native country; And, as they intermarried with the Chinese women, their descendants are naturalized, and have for the most part adopted not only the language, but even the religion of China. Hence the above-mentioned church, though it still exists, is no longer applied to the purpose of Divine worship; its priest was transferred to the church built within the walls of the caravansary.

† The good effects of this institution have already been perceived. A Russian, whose name is Leontief, after residing ten years at Pekin, is returned to Petersburg. He has given several translations and extracts of some interesting Chinese publications, viz. Part of the History of China; the Code of the Chinese Laws; Account of the Towns and Revenues, &c. of the Chinese Empire, extracted from a Treatise of Geography, lately printed at Pekin. A short account of this Extract is given in the Journal of St. Petersburg for April, 1779.

‡ S. R. G. VIII. p. 513.

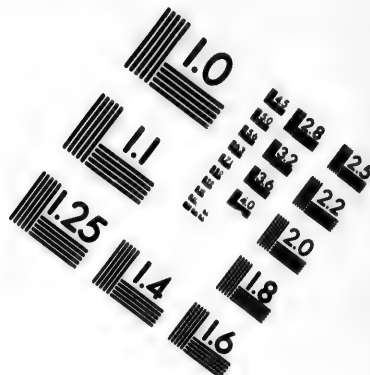
circumstances:

cumstances: the exportation and importation of many principal commodities, particularly the most valuable furs, were formerly prohibited to individuals, and solely allowed to caravans belonging to the crown. By these restrictions the Russian trade to China was greatly circumscribed; but Catherine, in 1762, abolished the monopoly, and renounced in favour of her subjects the exclusive privilege of sending caravans to Pekin†. By these concessions the profits of the trade have been considerably increased; the great expence, hazard, and delay, of transporting the merchandise occasionally from the frontiers of Siberia to Pekin, has been retrenched; and Kiakta is now become the center of the Russian and Chinese commerce.

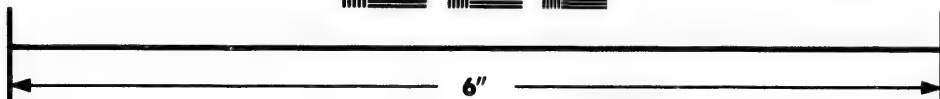
In 1785 the trade of Kiakta was suspended in consequence of some misunderstanding between the courts, but it was renewed in 1792.

† S. R. G. VIII. p. 520.





Resolution test chart showing patterns of vertical and horizontal lines next to numerical values ranging from 1.0 to 4.0.



**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

0
1.8 2.0 2.2 2.5 2.8 3.2 3.6 4.0 4.5 5.0 5.6 6.3 7.1 8.0 9.0 10.0 11.2 12.5 14.0 16.0 18.0 20.0 22.5 25.0 28.0 31.5 36.0 40.0 45.0 50.0 56.0 63.0 71.0 80.0 90.0 100.0

11 01

CHAP. 3.

*Account of the Russian and Chinese Settlements on the Confines of Siberia—
Description of the Russian frontier Town Kiakta—of the Chinese frontier
Town Maimatſchin—its Buildings, Pagodas, &c.*

BY the treaty of Kiakta it was stipulated, that the commerce between Russia and China should be transacted at the frontiers. Accordingly two spots were marked out for that purpose; one near the brook Kiakta, and the other at Zurukaitu.

Kiakta consists of a Russian and Chinese town, both situated in a romantic valley, surrounded by high, rocky, and for the most part well-wooded mountains. The valley is intersected by the brook Kiakta, which rises in Siberia, and, after washing both towns falls into the Bura, at a small distance from the frontiers.

The Russian settlement, called Kiakta from the brook, lies in $124^{\circ} 18'$ longitude from the Isle of Ferro, and about 50° N. latitude, at the distance of three thousand six hundred and seventy-six miles from Moscow, and one thousand and twenty-five from Pekin.

It consists of a fortress and a small suburb. The fortress, which is built on a gentle rise, is a square enclosed with palisadoes, and strengthened with wooden

wooden bastions. There are three gates, at which guards are constantly stationed; one faces the north, a second the south, towards the Chinese frontiers, and a third the east near the brook Kiakta. The principal public buildings in the fortress, are a wooden church, the governor's house, the magazine for provisions, and the guard-house. It contains also a range of shops and warehouses, barracks for the garrison, and several houses belonging to the crown, which are generally inhabited by the principal merchants. These buildings are mostly of wood.

The suburb, which is surrounded by a wooden wall, covered at the top with chevaux de frise, contains no more than a hundred and twenty houses irregularly built; it has the same number of gates as the fortress, which are also guarded. Without this suburb, on the high-road leading to Selenginsk, stand a few houses, and the magazine for rhubarb.

This settlement is ill provided with water; for although the brook Kiakta is dammed up near the fortress, yet it is so shallow in summer as to be scarcely sufficient for the supply of the inhabitants, unless after heavy rains. It is also unwholesome; and the springs in the neighbourhood are either foul or brackish; from these circumstances, the principal inhabitants are obliged to procure water from a spring in the Chinese district. The soil of the adjacent country is mostly sand or rock, and extremely barren; but, if the frontiers of Russia were extended about six miles further south to the rivulet of Bura, the inhabitants of Kiakta would enjoy good water, a fruitful soil, and plenty of fish; advantages which at present are confined to the Chinese.

The garrison of Kiakta consists of a company of regular soldiers, who are

occa-

occasionally changed, and some Cossacs who are fixed inhabitants of the place. It is the duty of the commander to inspect the frontiers, and, in conjunction with the president of the Chinese merchants, to settle all affairs of an inferior nature; but in matters of importance recourse must be had to the chancery of Selenginsk, and to the governor of Irkutsk. The Russian merchants, and the agents of the Russian trading company, are the principal inhabitants of Kiakta.

The limits from this settlement westwards to the river Selenga, and eastwards as far as Tchikoi, are bounded with chevaux de frize, in order to prevent a contraband trade in cattle, for the exportation of which a considerable duty is paid to the crown. All the outposts along the frontiers westwards as far as the government of Tobolsk, and eastwards to the mountains of snow, are under the command of the governor of Kiakta.

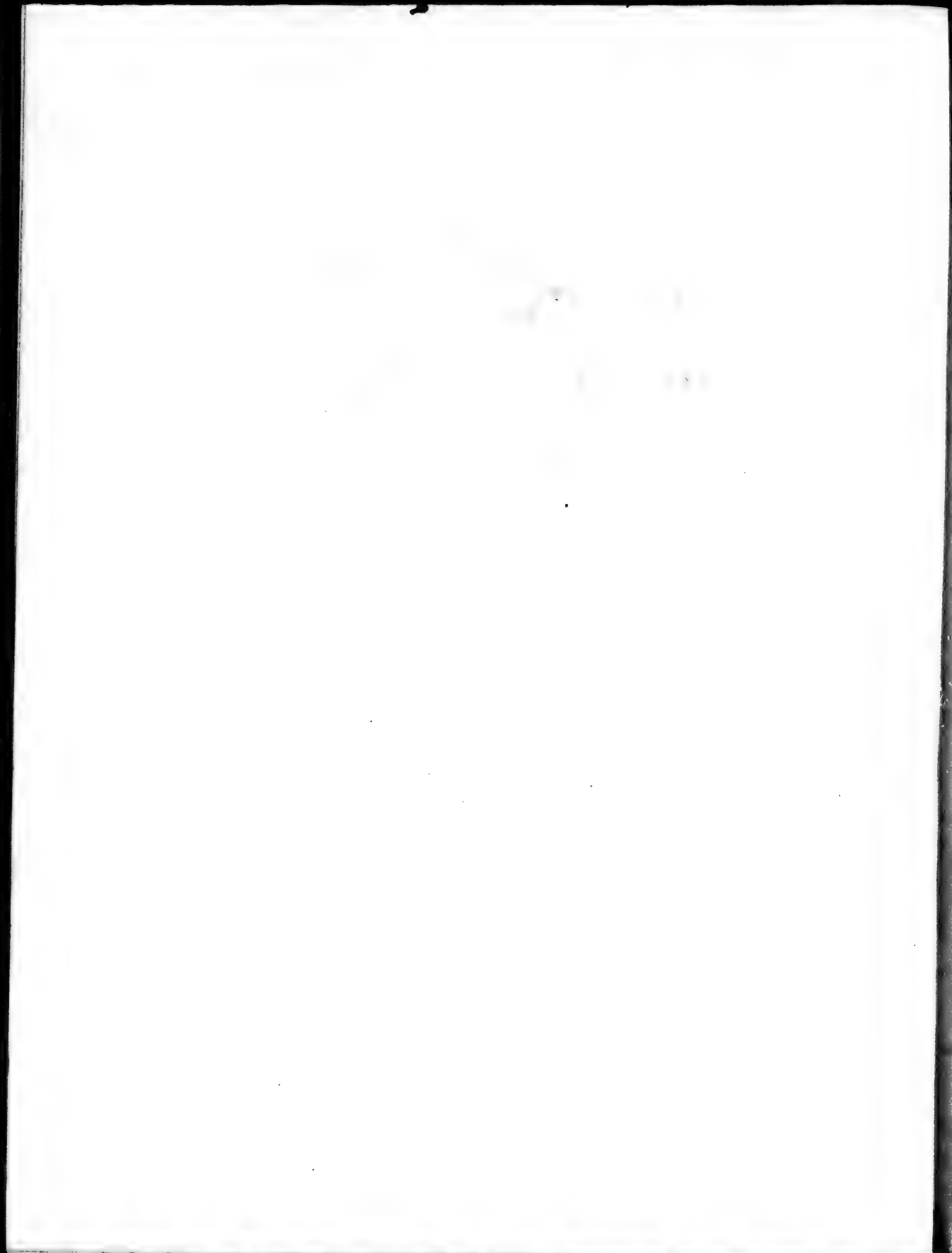
The most elevated of the mountains, surrounding the valley of Kiakta, and which is called by the Mongols Burgulkei, commands the Russian as well as the Chinese town; for this reason the Chinese, at the conclusion of the last treaty, required the cession of this mountain, under the pretext that some of their deified ancestors were buried on the summit. The Russians acceded to their request; and suffered the boundary to be carried on the north side of the mountain.

The Chinese town is called by the Chinese and Mongols Maimatshin, which signifies fortress of commerce. The Russians term it the Chinese Village (*Kitaiskaia Sloboda*), and Naimatshin, which is a corruption of Maimatshin. It is situated about an hundred and forty yards south of the
fortress



VIEW of MAIMAT SCHIN

Pub by T. Lindell & W. Parnes, Island Man, 1891



fortress of Kiakta, and nearly parallel to it. Between this place and the Russian fortress, two posts about ten feet high are fixed to mark the frontiers of the two empires; one inscribed with Russian, the other with Manchu characters*.

Maimatschin is only fortified with a wooden wall, and a small ditch of about three feet broad, which was dug in the year 1756, during the war between the Chinese and the Calmucs. The town is of an oblong form, in length about seven hundred yards, and in breadth four hundred. On each of the four sides a large gate faces the principal streets; over each of these gates is a wooden guard-house for the Chinese garrison, which consists of Mongols in tattered clothes, and armed with clubs. Without the gate, which looks to the Russian frontiers, and at the distance of a few yards from the entrance, the Chinese have raised a wooden screen, so constructed as to intercept all view of the streets from without.

This town contains two hundred houses and about twelve hundred inhabitants. It has two principal streets eight yards broad, crossing in the middle at right angles, with two by-streets running from north to south. They are not paved, but are laid with gravel, and kept remarkably clean.

The houses are spacious, uniformly built of wood, of only one story, not more than fourteen feet high, plastered and white-washed, and constructed

* On the mountain to the west of Kiakta, the limit is again marked; on the Russian side by a heap of stones and earth, ornamented on the top with a cross; and on the Chinese, by a pile of stones in the shape of a pyramid.—Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 110.

round a court-yard of about seventy feet square, which is neatly strewed with gravel. Each house consists of a sitting-room, warehouses, and a kitchen. In the houses of the wealthy sort the roof is made of plank, but in meaner habitations of lath covered with turf. Towards the streets most of the houses have arcades projecting from the roof, like a pent-house, and supported by strong pillars. The windows are large after the European manner, but, on account of the dearth of glass and Russian talc, are generally of paper, excepting a few panes of glass in the sitting-room.

The sitting-room is seldom turned towards the streets; it is a kind of shop, where the patterns of merchandize are placed in recesses, fitted up with shelves, and secured from dust with paper doors. The windows are generally ornamented with little paintings, and the walls hung with Chinese paper. Half the floor is of hard-beaten clay; the other half covered with boards, and rises about two feet. Here the family sit in the day and sleep at night. By the side of this raised part, and nearly upon the same level, is a square brick stove, from which a tube descends, and is carried zigzag under the boarded floor, and from thence to a chimney which opens into the street. By this contrivance, although the stove is always open and the flame visible; yet the room is never troubled with smoke. There is scarcely any furniture in the room, excepting one large dining-table in the lower part, and two small lackered tables on the raised floor: one of these tables is always provided with a chaffing-dish, which serves to light their pipes when the stove is not heated.

In this room are several small niches covered with silken curtains, before which are placed lamps lighted upon festivals; these niches contain painted
paper

paper idols; a stone or metal vessel, wherein the ashes of incense are collected, and several small ornaments and artificial flowers.

The Bucharian * merchants inhabit the south-west quarter of Maimatschin. Their houses are not so large or commodious as those of the Chinese, although the greater part of them carry on a very considerable commerce.

The Surgutschèi, or governor of Maimatschin, has the care of the police, as well as the direction of all affairs relating to commerce; he is generally a person of rank, oftentimes a Mandarin, who having misbehaved himself in another station, is sent here as a kind of punishment. He is distinguished by the crystal button of his cap, and by a peacock's † feather hanging behind. The Chinese give him the title of Amban, which signifies commander in chief, and no one appears before him without bending the knee, in which posture the person who brings a petition must remain until he receives the governor's answer. His salary is not large; but the presents which he receives from the merchants amount annually to a considerable sum.

The most remarkable public buildings in Maimatschin, are the governor's house, the theatre, and two pagodas. The governor's house is larger and

* "The chief merchandise, which the Bucharians bring to Russia, are cotton, stuffs, and half-silks, spun and raw cotton, lamb-skins, precious stones, gold-dust, unprepared nitre, sal-ammoniac, &c."

† In China the princes of the blood wear three peacocks feathers; nobles of the highest distinction, two; and the lower class of the nobility, one. It is also a mark of high rank to keep a carriage with four wheels. All the Chinese wear buttons of different colours in their caps, which also denote the rank.—Pallas Reise, P. III, p. 126.

better furnished than the others ; it is distinguished by a chamber where the court of justice is held, and by two high poles before the entrance ornamented with flags. The theatre, situated close to the wall of the town near the great pagoda, is a small shed, neatly painted, open in front, and merely large enough to contain the stage ; the audience stand in the street. Near it are two high poles, upon which two large flags with Chinese inscriptions are hoisted on festivals. On such occasions the servants belonging to the merchants act short burlesque farces in honour of their idols. The smallest of the two pagodas is a wooden building, standing on pillars in the center of the town, at the intersection of the two principal streets. It is a tower of two stories, adorned on the outside with small columns, paintings, and little iron-bells, &c. in the clumsiest manner. The first story is square, the second octangular. In the lower story is a picture representing the god Tien, which signifies, according to the explanation of the most intelligent Chinese, the Most High God, who rules over the thirty-two heavens. The Manchus are said to call this idol Abcho ; and the Mongols, Tingheru, heaven, or the God of heaven. He is represented sitting with his head uncovered, and encircled with a ray * of glory similar to that which surrounds the head of our Saviour in the Roman catholic paintings ; his hair is long and flowing ; he holds in his right hand a drawn sword, and his left is extended as in the act of giving a benediction. One side of this

* When Mr. Pallas obtained permission of the governor to see this temple, the latter assured him that the Jesuits of Pekin, and their converts, adored this idol. From whence he ingeniously conjectures, either that the resemblance between this idol, and the representation of our Saviour by the Roman Catholics, was the occasion of this assertion ; or that the Jesuits, in order to excite the devotion of the converts, have, out of policy, given to the picture of our Saviour a resemblance to the Tien of the Chinese.—Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 119.

two youths, on the other a maiden and a grey-headed old man, are delineated.

The upper story contains the picture of another idol in a black and white chequered cap, with the same figures of three young persons and a little old man. This temple contains no other ornaments. It is opened only on festivals, and strangers cannot see it without permission.

The great pagoda *, situated before the governor's house, and near the principal gate looking to the south, is larger and more magnificent. Strangers are allowed to see it at all times, provided they are accompanied by one of the priests, who are always to be found in the area of the temple. This area is surrounded with chevaux de frise: the entrance is from the south through two gates with a small building between them. In the inside of this building are two recesses with rails, behind which are the coarse clay images of two horses as large as life: they are saddled and bridled, and attended by two human figures dressed like grooms. The horse to the right is of a chestnut colour, the other dun with a black mane and tail; the former is in the attitude of springing, the latter of walking. Near each horse is displayed a banner of yellow silk painted with silver dragons.

In the middle of this area are two wooden turrets surrounded with galleries:

* The great pagoda is omitted in the engraving of Maimatschin prefixed to this chapter; an omission owing to the artist's being obliged to leave Kiakta before he had time to finish the drawing. In every other respect, the view, as I was informed by a gentleman who has been on the spot, is complete, and represented with the greatest exactness.

a large bell of cast iron, which is struck occasionally with a wooden mallet, hangs in the eastern turret; the other contains two kettle-drums of an enormous size, similar to those used in the religious ceremonies of the Calmucs. On each side of this area are ranges of buildings inhabited by the priests.

The area communicates by a handsome gateway with the inner court, which is bordered on each side by small compartments open in front, with rails before them. These compartments are ornamented with historical paintings illustrating the legendary stories of the idols. At the farther extremity of this court stands a large building, in the same style of architecture as the temple. The inside is sixty feet long and thirty broad: it is stored with antient weapons, and instruments of war of a prodigious size; such as spears, scythes, and long pikes with broad blades, shields, coats of arms, and military ensigns representing hands*, dragons heads, and other carved figures; these are richly gilded, and ranged on scaffolds along the wall. Opposite the entrance a large yellow standard, embroidered with foliage and silver dragons, is erected; under which, upon a kind of altar, are little oblong tables, bearing Chinese inscriptions.

An open gallery, adorned on both sides with flower-pots, leads from the back-door of the armoury to the colonade of the temple. In this colonade two slate tablets are placed, in wooden frames, with long inscriptions relating to the building of the temple. Before one of these plates a small idol of an hideous form stands on the ground, enclosed in a wooden case.

* These hands resemble the manipular standards of the Romans.

The temple itself is an elegant building, richly decorated with columns, lackered and gilded carved-work, small bells, and other ornaments peculiar to the Chinese architecture. Within is a profusion of gilding, which corresponds with the gaudiness of the exterior. The walls are covered with paintings, exhibiting the most celebrated exploits of the principal idol.

This temple contains five idols of a colossal stature, sitting cross-legged on pedestals in three recesses, which fill the northern side.

The principal idol is seated in the middle recess, between two columns ornamented with gilded dragons. Large streamers of silk, hanging from the roof of the temple, veil the upper part of the image. His name is Ghedfur, or Ghessur Chan*; the Chinese call him Loo-ye, or the first and most antient; and the Manchurs, Guanlœ or the superior god. The idol is of a gigantic size, four times as large as the human stature, with a face glistening like burnished gold, black hair and beard. He wears a crown, and is richly dressed in the Chinese fashion: his garments are not moulded out of clay, like those of the other idols; but made of the finest silk. He holds in his hands a tablet, which he seems to read with deep attention. Two small female figures, resembling girls, stand on each side of the idol, on the same pedestal;

* The Mongols and Calmucs call him by this name of Ghessur Chan; and although they do not reckon him among their divinities, yet they consider him as a great hero, the Bacchus and Hercules of Eastern Tartary, who was born at the source of the Koango, and who vanquished many monsters. They have in their language a long history of his heroic deeds. His title, in the Mongul tongue, is as follows: Arban Zeeghi Essin Ghessur Bogdo Chan: the king of the ten points of the compass, or the monarch Ghessur Chan.

one of whom grasps a roll of paper. At the right hand of the idol lie seven golden arrows, and at the left a bow.

Before the idol is a spacious enclosure, surrounded with rails, within which stands an altar with four colossal figures, intended probably to represent the principal mandarins of the deified Gheffur. Two of these figures are dressed like judges, and hold before them small tablets, similar to that in the hands of the principal idol. The two other figures are accoutred in complete armour, one wears a turban, and carries, on the left shoulder, a large sword sheathed, with the hilt upwards. The other with a hideous copper-coloured face, and a large belly, grasps in his right-hand a lance with a broad blade.

The first idol in the recess to the right is called Maooang, or the Otschibanni of the Mongols. He has three ghastly copper-coloured faces, and six arms; two of his arms brandish sabres cross-ways over his head; a third bears a looking-glass; and a fourth a square which resembles a piece of ivory. The remaining arms are employed in drawing a bow, with an arrow, ready to be discharged. This idol has a mirror upon the breast, and an eye in the navel; near it are placed two small figures; one holding an arrow, and the other a little animal.

The next idol in the same recess is called by the Chinese Tfaudfing, or the gold and silver god; and by the Mongols Tfağan-Dfambala. He wears a black cap, is dressed after the Chinese fashion, in sumptuous robes of state; and bears in his hand a small casket. Near him also stand two little figures, one of which holds a truncated branch.

In

In the recess to the left is the god Kufho, called by the Manchurs Kufchan, and by the Mongols Galdi, or the Fire God. He is represented with a frightful fiery red face, clad in complete armour, wielding a sword half-drawn out of the scabbard, and seems in the act of starting from his seat. He is attended by two little halberdeers, one of whom is crying; and the other bears a fowl upon his hand, resembling a sea-pheasant.

The other idol in the same recess is the god of oxen, Niu-o, who appears sitting in a composed posture, habited like a Mandarin, and distinguished by a crown; and has, in common with the other idols, a mirror on his breast. The Chinese imagine him to be the same with the Yamandaga of the Mongols; and it is said his Manchurish name is Kain Killova; his Mongol name, which relates to the history of Gheffur, is Bars-Batir, the Hero of Tygers.

Before these several idols are tables, or altars, on which cakes, pastry, dried fruit, and flesh, are placed on festivals and prayer-days: on particular occasions even whole carcases of sheep are offered. Tapers and lamps burn day and night before the idols. Among the utensils of the temple, the most remarkable is a vessel shaped like a quiver, and filled with flat pieces of cleft reed, on which short devices are inscribed. These devices are taken out by the Chinese on New-year's-day; and are considered as oracles for the ensuing year. There lies also on a table a wooden black lackered helmet, which all persons of devotion strike with a wooden hammer, whenever they enter the temple. This helmet is regarded with peculiar awe, and no strangers are permitted to handle it, although allowed to touch even the idols themselves.

The first day of the new and full moon is appointed for the celebration of
worship.

worship. On each of these days no Chinese ever fails to make his appearance once in the temple; he enters without taking off his cap*; joins his hands before his face; bows five times to each idol, touches with his forehead the pedestal on which it sits, and then retires. Their principal festivals are held in the first month of their year, answering to February, which is called by them, as well as by the Mongols, the white month; and is considered as lucky for the transaction of business. At that time flags are displayed before the temples; offerings of meat placed on the tables of the idols, which the priests take away in the evening, and eat in the small apartments of the interior court. On these solemnities plays are performed in the theatre in honour of the idols; the pieces are generally satyrical, and pointed against unjust magistrates and judges.

But although the Chinese have so few ceremonies in their system of religious worship, they are remarkably prone to superstition. Mr. Pallas gives the following description of their behaviour at Maimatschin during an eclipse of the moon. At the close of the evening in which the eclipse appeared, all the inhabitants seemed to vie with raising an incessant uproar, some by hideous shrieks, others by knocking wood, and beating cauldrons; the din was heightened by striking the bell, and beating the kettle-drums of the great Pagoda. The Chinese suppose, that during an eclipse the wicked spirit of the air, called by the Mongols Arakulla, is attacking the moon; and that he is frightened away by these hideous shrieks and noises. Another instance fell under the observation of Mr. Pallas, while at Maimatschin. A fire breaking out with such violence that several houses were in flames, none of the inhabitants at-

* Among the Chinese, as well as other eastern nations, it is reckoned a mark of disrespect to uncover the head before a superior.

tempted

tempted to extinguish it; they stood in idle consternation round the fire, while some sprinkled water occasionally among the flames, in order to sooth the fire god, who, as they imagined, had chosen their houses for a sacrifice. Had not the Russians exerted themselves in quenching the fire, the whole place would probably have been reduced to ashes*.

* This account of Kiakta and Maimatschin is taken from Mr. Pallas's description of Kiakta, in the journal of his travels through Siberia, P. III. p. 199—126. Every circumstance relating to the religious worship of the eastern nations is in itself so interesting, that I thought it would not be unacceptable to my readers to give a translation of the above passages respecting the Chinese Pagodas and idols, although in a work treating of the new Discoveries, and the commerce which is connected with them.

CHAP. 4.

Commerce between the Chinese and Russians—List of the principal Exports and Imports—Duties—Average Amount of the Russian Trade.

THE merchants of Maimatschin come from the northern provinces of China, and chiefly from Peking, Nankin, Sandchue, and other principal towns. They are not settled at this place with their wives and families; for it is a remarkable circumstance, that there is not one woman in Maimatschin. This restriction arises from the policy of the Chinese government, which prohibits the women from having the slightest intercourse with foreigners. No Chinese merchant engages in the trade to Siberia who has not a partner: these persons mutually relieve each other; one remains for a stated time, usually a year, at Kiakta; and, when his partner arrives with a fresh cargo of merchandise, he returns home with the Russian commodities*.

Most of the Chinese merchants understand the Mongol tongue, in which language commercial affairs are generally transacted. Some few indeed speak Russian; but their pronunciation is so soft and delicate, that it is difficult to comprehend them. They are not able to pronounce the R, but instead of it use an L; and when two consonants come together, which frequently occurs in the Russian tongue, they divide them by the interposition of a

* Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 125.

vowel.

vowel *. This defect in articulating the Russian language seems peculiar to the Chinese; and is not observable in the Calmucs, Mongols, and other neighbouring nations †.

The commerce between the Russians and Chinese is entirely a trade of barter. The Russians are prohibited from exporting their own coin; nor indeed could the Chinese receive it, for nothing is current amongst them except bullion ‡. And the Russians find it more advantageous to take mer-

* Bayer, in his *Museum Sinicum*, gives several curious instances of the Chinese mode of articulating those sounds, which they have not in their own language. For instance, they change B, D, R, Y, Z into P, T, L, S, S.

Thus for Maria they say Ma-li-ya;

for crux, cu-lu-su;

for Baptizo, pa-pe-ti-so;

for cardinalis, kia-ul-fi-na-li-su;

for spiritus, su-pi-li-tu-su;

for Adam, va-tam;

for Eva, nge-va;

for Christus, ki-li-su-tu-su;

Нѳц, est, corpus, meum—ho-ke, nge-su-tu, co-ul pu-su-me-vum.

Bayer, *Mus. Sin.* tom. I. p. 15.

† Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 134.

‡ The Chinese have no gold or silver coin. These metals are always paid in bullion; and for the purpose of ascertaining the weight, every Chinese merchant is provided with a pair of scales. As gold is scarce in China, silver is the great medium of commerce. When several authors affirm that the Russians draw large quantities of silver from China, they mistake an accidental occurrence for a general and standing fact. During the war between the Chinese and Calmucs, the former had occasion to purchase at Kiakta, provision, horses, and camels, for which they paid silver. This traffic brought such a profusion of that metal into Siberia, that

merchandise in exchange, than to receive bullion at the Chinese standard. The common method of transacting business is as follows: The Chinese factor, having at Kiakta examined the merchandise in the warehouse of the Russian trader, they adjust the price over a dish of tea. Both parties return to the magazine; and the goods in question are carefully sealed in the presence of the merchants. At the conclusion of this ceremony, they both repair to Maimatfchin; the Russian chooses the commodities he wants, not forgetting to guard against fraud by a strict inspection. He then takes the precaution to leave behind a person of confidence, who remains in the warehouse until the Russian goods are delivered, when he returns to Kiakta with the Chinese merchandise*.

The principal commodities which Russia exports to China are:

FURS AND PELTRY.

It would be uninteresting to enumerate all the furs and skins † brought for sale to Kiakta, which form the most important article of exportation on the

its price was greatly reduced. A pound of silver was at that period occasionally sold at the frontiers for eight or nine roubles, which at present is worth fifteen or sixteen. But since the conclusion of these wars by the total reduction of the Calmucs, Russia receives a very small quantity of silver from the Chinese.—S. R. G. III. p. 595 & seq.

The silver imported to Kiakta is chiefly brought by the Bucharian merchants, who sell cattle to the Chinese in exchange for that metal, which they afterwards dispose of to the Russians for European manufactures. Gold-dust is also occasionally obtained from the same merchants; the quantity, however, of those metals procured at Kiakta is so inconsiderable, as scarcely to deserve mention. The whole sum of gold and silver imported at Kiakta, in 1777, amounted to only eighteen thousand two hundred and fifteen roubles.

* Pallas Reise, p. III. p. 135.

† The list of all the furs and skins brought to Kiakta, with their several prices, is to be found in Pallas Reise, Part III. p. 136 to p. 142.

side of the Russians. The most valuable are those of sea-otters, beavers, foxes, wolves, bears, Bucharian lambs, Astracan sheep, martens, sables, ermines, grey-squirrels.

The greater part of these furs and skins are brought from Siberia and the new-discovered islands; a supply, however, not fully adequate to the demand of the market. Foreign furs are therefore imported to St. Petersburg, and from thence sent to Kiakta. England alone furnishes a large quantity of beaver and other skins, procured from Hudson's Bay and Canada*.

CLOTH.

The coarse sort is manufactured in Russia; the finer is foreign, chiefly English, Prussian, and French. An arshine of foreign cloth is worth according

* List of furs sent from England to Petersburg in the following years:

	Beaver-skins.	Otter-skins.
1775	46460	7143
1776	27700	12086
1777	27316	10703.

The finest Hudson's beavers have been sold upon an average at Petersburg, from
70—90 roubles per 10 skins.

Inferior ditto and best Canada beavers from	50—75
Young or cub-beavers from - - -	20—35
Best otter-skins from - - -	90—100
Inferior ones from - - -	60—80.

The qualities of these skins, being very different, occasion great variations in the prices.

At Kiakta, the best Hudson's Bay beaver is sold from 7 to 20 roubles per skin.

Otter's ditto - - - - - 6—35.

Black foxes skins from Canada are also sometimes sent from England to Petersburg.

At Kiakta they fetch from 1 to 100 roubles per skin.

to its fineness, from two to four roubles; also camlets, calimancoes, druggets, and white flannels, both Russian and foreign.

The remaining articles are, rich stuffs, velvets, and coarse linen, chiefly manufactured in Russia; Russia leather, tanned hides, glass ware and looking glasses, hardware, &c. Tin, Russian talc; cattle, chiefly camels, horses, and horned cattle; the Chinese also give a great price for hounds, grey-hounds, barbets, and dogs for hunting wild boars; provisions * and meal. The Chinese no longer import such large quantities of meal as formerly; since they have employed the Mongols to cultivate the lands lying near the river Orchon †, &c. &c.

List of the most valuable Commodities procured from China.

RAW AND MANUFACTURED SILK.

The exportation of raw silk is prohibited in China, under pain of death; large quantities, however, are smuggled yearly to Kiakta, but not sufficient to answer the demands of the Russian merchants.

A pood of the best sort is estimated at	-	150 roubles;
Of the worst at	- - -	75.

* In the year 1773, the Chinese purchased meat at Kiakta, at the following prices:

A pound of beef $3\frac{1}{2}$ copecs.

lamb $2\frac{1}{2}$

Horse-flesh for the Tartars $\frac{1}{2}$.—Pallas Reise, P. III.

† S. R. G. III. p. 495—571.—Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 136—144.

The

The manufactured silks are of various sorts, fashions, and prices, viz. satins, taffeties, damasks, and gauzes, skains of silk died of all colours, ribbons, &c. &c.

RAW AND MANUFACTURED COTTON.

Raw cotton is imported in large quantities; a great part of this commodity being employed in packing up the china-ware, is conveyed into the inland part of Russia without additional expence of carriage. A pood sells for, from 4 roubles, 80 copecs, to twelve.

Of the manufactured cotton, that which the Russians call kitaika, and the English nankeen, has the most rapid sale. It is the most durable, and, in proportion to its goodness, the cheapest of all the Chinese stuffs, it is stained red, brown, green, and black.

TEAS.

The teas, brought into Russia are much superior in flavour and quality to those sent to Europe from Canton. The original goodness is probably the same in both cases; but the transport by sea perhaps impairs the aromatic flavour of the plant. This commodity, now become so favourite an object of European luxury, is esteemed by the Russian merchants the most profitable article of importation.

At Kiakta a pound of the best tea * is estimated at	-	2 roubles.
Common ditto at	-	1
Inferior at	-	40 ccp.

* At Petersburg a pound of the best green tea costs three roubles.

FORCE-

PORCELAIN OF ALL SORTS.

For some years past the Chinese have brought to Kiakta, porcelain, painted with European figures, and with copies of several favourite prints and images of the Grecian and Roman deities.

Furniture, particularly Japan cabinets and cases, lackered and varnished tables and chairs, boxes inlaid with mother-of-pearl, &c. &c.

Fans, toys, and other small wares. Artificial flowers; tiger and panther skins; rubies*, but neither in large quantities nor of great value. White lead, vermilion, and other colours; canes; tobacco; rice; sugar-candy; preserved ginger, and other sweetmeats; rhubarb; musk, &c. &c.

It is difficult to procure the genuine Thibet musk, because the Chinese adulterate it with an inferior sort from Siberia†.

Russia derives great advantages from the Chinese trade; as its natural productions, and particularly its furs and skins, are disposed of with considerable profit. Many of these furs, procured from the most easterly parts of Siberia, are of too little value to answer the expence of carriage into

* Rubies are generally procured by smuggling; and by the same means pearls are occasionally disposed of to the Chinese, at a very high price. Pearls are much sought for by the Chinese; and might be made a profitable article.

† S. R. G. III. p. 572—592. Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 144—153.

Russia; while the richer furs, which are sold to the Chinese at a high price, would, on account of their dearth, seldom meet with purchasers in the Russian dominions. In exchange for these commodities the Russians receive from China several valuable articles of commerce, which they would otherwise be obliged to procure at a much higher rate from the European powers. I have before observed, that the exportation and importation of the most valuable goods were formerly prohibited to individuals; the restriction at present extends to the following articles only. Among the exports, fire-arms and artillery; gun-powder and ball; gold and silver, coined and uncoined; stallions and mares; skins of deer, rein-deer, elks, and horses; beavers' hair, potash, rosin, thread, and * tinsel-lace. Imports; salt, brandy, poisons, and copper-money.

The duties paid by the Russian merchants are considerable; great part of the merchandize is taxed at	-	-	-	-	-	25 per cent.
Furs, cattle, and provisions, pay a duty of	-	-	-	-	-	23
Russian manufactures	-	-	-	-	-	18.

One per cent. is also deducted from the price of all goods, for the expence of deepening the river Selenga; and seven per cent. for the support of the custom-house.

Some articles, both of export and import, pay no duty. The exports are,

* Tinsel-lace is smuggled to the Chinese, with considerable profit; for they pay nearly as much for it as if it was solid silver. S. R. G. III. p. 588.

writing, royal, and post paper; Russian cloth of all sorts and colours, excepting peasants' cloth. The imports are, fattins, raw and stained cottons, porcelain, earthen-ware, glass corals, beads, fans, musical instruments, furniture, lackered and enamelled ornaments, needles, white-lead, rice, preserved ginger, and other sweet-meats †.

Table of Exportation and Importation at Kiakta, in the year 1777.

		Roubles. Cop.
Custom-house duties	- - - - -	481,460. 59½
Importation of Chinese goods, to the value of	- -	1,466,497. 3½
Of gold and silver	- - - - -	18,215.
Total of importation	- - - - -	1,484,712. 3½
Exportation of Russian commodities	- - - - -	1,383,621. 35
From this table it appears, that the total sum of export and import amounts to	- - - - -	2,868,333.

In this calculation the contraband trade is not included, which is very large; and as the year 1777 was not so favourable to this traffic as the pre-

† Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 134.

ceding years*, we may venture to estimate the gross amount of the average trade to China at near 4,000,000 roubles.

* In 1770, 1771, 1772, the custom-house duties at Kiakta (according to Mr. Pallas, P. III. p. 154.) produced 350,000 roubles. By taking therefore the medium between that sum and 481,460, the amount of the duties in 1777, the average sum of the duties will be 515,730; and, as the duties in 1777 make nearly a sixth of the whole sum of exportation and importation, by multiplying 515,730 by 6, we have the gross amount of the average exports and imports at 3,094,380. But as several goods pay no duty; and as the contraband trade, according to the lowest valuation, is estimated at the fifth part of the exports and imports, the gross amount of the average trade to China may be fairly computed at near 4,000,000, the sum stated above.

CHAP. 5.

Description of Zurukaitu—and its Trade—Transport of the Merchandise through Siberia.

AS almost the whole intercourse between Russia and China is confined to Kiakta, the general account of the traffic has been given in the preceding chapter. The description therefore of Zurukaitu will be comprised in a narrow compass.

Zurukaitu is situated in 137°. longitude, and near 50°. N. latitude, on the western branch of the river Argoon, at a small distance from its source. It is provided with a small garrison, and a few wretched barracks, surrounded with chevaux de frise. No merchants are settled here; a few traders come every summer from Nerzhinsk, and other Russian towns, to meet two parties of Mongol troops, who are sent from the Chinese towns Naun and Merg-hen, and arrive at the frontiers about July. These troops encamp near Zurukaitu, on the other side of the river Argoon, and barter a few Chinese commodities with the Siberian merchants.

Formerly this traffic was more considerable; but at present is so trifling, that it scarcely deserves mention. These Mongols furnish the district of Nerzhinsk with bad tea and tobacco, bad silks, and some tolerable cottons.

They

They receive in return, ordinary furs, cloth, cattle, and Russian leather. This trade lasts about a month or six weeks; and the annual duties of the customs amount, on an average, to not more than five hundred roubles. About the middle of August the Mongols retire: part proceed immediately to China; and the others descend the stream of the Amoor to its mouth, to observe any encroachment on the limits. The Russian merchants return at the same time to Nerzhinsk; and were it not for the garrison, Zurukaitu would be quite deserted*.

The Russian commodities are transported by land from Petersburg and Moscow to Tobolsk. From thence the merchants sometimes embark on the Irtysh down to its junction with the Oby; up which river they either row their boats, or sail as far as Naryn, where they enter the Ket, and ascend to Makoffkoi Ostrog. The merchandize is conveyed about ninety versts by land to the Yeniseï, is carried up that river, the Tunguska, and Angara, to Irkutsk; across the lake Baikal; and then up the river Selenga almost to Kiakta.

It is a work of such difficulty to ascend the streams of so many rapid rivers, that this navigation eastwards can scarcely be accomplished in one summer†; for which reason the merchants commonly prefer the route by land. Their general rendezvous is the fair of Irbit near Tobolsk, from whence they travel in sledges during winter to Kiakta, where they arrive about February.

* S. R. G. III. p. 463.—Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 423.

† Some of these rivers are only navigable in spring, when the snow water is melting; in winter they are in general frozen.

When

When the merchants return in spring with the Chinese goods, which are of greater bulk and weight than the Russian commodities, they proceed by water; descend the streams of most of the rivers, namely, the Selenga, Angara, Tunguska, Ket, and Oby, to its junction with the Irtysh; they ascend that river to Tobolsk, and travel by land to Moscow and Peterburgh.

Before the passage from Okotsk to Bolcheretsk was discovered in 1716, the only communication between Kamchatka and Siberia was by land; and the road lay by Anadirsk to Yakutsk. The furs* of Kamchatka and of the Eastern Isles are now conveyed from that peninsula by water to Okotsk; from thence to Yakutsk on horse-back, or by rein-deer. The roads are so rugged and marshy that the journey lasts at least six weeks.

Yakutsk is situated on the Lena, and is the principal town, where the choicest furs are brought in their way to Kiakta, as well from Kamchatka as from the northern parts of Siberia, which lie on the rivers Lena, Yana, and Indigirka. At Yakutsk the goods are embarked on the Lena, towed up the stream as far as Verkolensk, or Katsheg; from thence transported over a short tract of land to the rivulet Buguldeika, down that stream to the lake Baikal, across the lake to the mouth of the Selenga, and up that river to the neighbourhood of Kiakta.

* The furs, which are generally landed on the eastern coast of Kamchatka, are either sent by sea to Bolcheretsk, or transported across the peninsula in sledges drawn by dogs. The latter conveyance is only used in winter; and is the common mode of travelling in that country. In summer there is no conveyance, as the peninsula contains neither oxen, horses, or rein-deer. S. R. G. III. p. 478.

To

To give the reader some notion of that vast tract of country, over which the merchandize is frequently transported by land-carriage, a list of the distances is here subjoined :

From Petersburg to Moscow	-	-	734 versts,
Moscow to Tobolsk	-	-	2,385
Tobolsk to Irkutsk	-	-	2,918
Irkutsk to Kiakta	-	-	471
			———— 6,508
			or 4,338 miles and 4,
From Irbit to Tobolsk	-	-	420
From Irkutsk to Nerzhinsk	-	-	1,129
Nerzhinsk to Zurukaitu	-	-	370
From Okotsk to Yakutsk	-	-	972
Yakutsk to Irkutsk	-	-	2,433
From Selenginsk to Zurukaitu	-	-	850
Zurukaitu to Pekin	-	-	1,588
Kiakta to Pekin	-	-	1,532.

The Chinese transport their goods to Kiakta chiefly on camels. It is four or five days journey from Pekin to the wall of China, and forty-six from thence across the Mongol desert to Kiakta*.

* Pallas Reise, P. III. p. 134.

CHAP. 6.

Tartarian Rhubarb brought to Kiakta by the Bucharian Merchants—Method of examining and purchasing the Roots—Different Species of Rheum which yield the finest Rhubarb—Price of Rhubarb in Russia—Exportation—Superiority of the Tartarian, over the Indian Rhubarb.

EUROPE is principally supplied with Rhubarb from Russia and the East-Indies; the former is generally known by the name of Turkey Rhubarb, because it was formerly imported from the Levant, and was procured through Persia from the Bucharians; it still retains its original name, although instead of being carried to Constantinople, it is brought to Kiakta by the Bucharian merchants, and there disposed of to the Russians. This appellation is indeed the most general; but it is mentioned occasionally by several authors, under the denominations of Russian, Tartarian, Bucharian, and Thibet Rhubarb. This is exported from Russia in large roundish pieces, freed from the bark, with a hole through the middle: they are externally of a yellow colour, and when cut appear variegated with lively reddish streaks.

The other sort is called by the druggists Indian Rhubarb; and is procured from Canton in longer, harder, heavier, more compact pieces: it is more astringent, and has somewhat less of an aromatic flavour; but, on account of its cheapness, is in more general use than the Tartarian or Turkey Rhubarb.

The

The Rhubarb is procured from the Bucharian merchants who come from the town of Selin, which lies south-westward of the Koko-Nor, or Blue Lake, towards Thibet. Selin, and all the towns of Little Bucharia, viz. Cashkar, Yerken, Atrar, &c. are subject to China.

The best rhubarb purchased at Kiakta is on a chain of rocks, lofty and mostly destitute of wood, which lie north of Selin, and stretch as far as the Koko-Nor. The good roots are distinguished by large and thick stems. The roots being dug up in April or May, are immediately cleansed from the soil, and hung on the neighbouring trees to dry; they are then wrapped up in woollen sacks, carefully preserved from the least humidity, and in this manner are transported upon camels to Kiakta.

The exportation of the best rhubarb is prohibited by the Chinese, under the severest penalties. It is procured, however, in sufficient quantities, sometimes by clandestinely mixing it with inferior roots, and sometimes by means of a contraband trade. The college of commerce at Petersburg is solely empowered to receive this drug, and appoints agents at Kiakta for that purpose. Much care is taken in the choice; for it is examined, in the presence of the Bucharian merchants, by an apothecary commissioned by government, and resident at Kiakta. All the worm-eaten roots are rejected; the remainder are bored through, to ascertain their soundness; and all the damaged or decayed parts are cut away. By these means even the best roots are diminished a sixth; and the refuse is burnt*.

* Pallas Reise, P III p. 155—157. When Mr. Pallas was at Kiakta, the Bucharian merchant, who supplies the crown with rhubarb, brought some pieces of white rhubarb (von milchweissen rhabarber) which had a sweet taste, and was equal in its effects to the best sort.

Linnaeus has distinguished the different species of rhubarb by the names *Rheum Palmatum*, *R. Rhaponticum*, * *R. Rhabarbarum*, *R. Compactum*, and *R. Ribes*.

Botanists have long differed in their opinions, which of these species is the true rhubarb; and that question does not yet appear to be satisfactorily determined. According to the general opinion, it is supposed to be the *Rheum* † *Palmatum*; the seeds of which were originally procured from a Bucharian merchant, and distributed to the principal botanists in Europe. Hence this plant has been cultivated with great success; and is now common in all our botanical gardens. The learned doctor ‡ Hope, professor of medicine and botany in the university of Edinburgh, having made trials of the powder of this root, in the same doses in which the foreign rhubarb is given, found no difference in the effects; and from thence conclusions have been drawn, with great appearance of probability, that this is the plant which produces the true rhubarb. But this inference does not appear to be absolutely conclusive; for the same trials have been repeated, and with similar success, on the roots of the *R. Rhaponticum* and *R. Rhabarbarum*.

The leaves of the *R. Rhaponticum* are round, and sometimes broader than they are long. This species is found abundantly in the loamy and dry deserts

* See Murray's edition of Linnaeus *Systema Vegetab.* Gott. 1744. In the former edition of Linnaeus, *Rheum Rhabarbarum* is called *R. Undulatum*.

† Mr. Pallas (to whom I am chiefly indebted for this account of the Tartarian and Siberian Rhubarb) assured me, that he never found the *R. Palmatum* in any part of Siberia.

‡ Phil. Trans. for 1763, p. 290.

between

between the Volga and the Yaik*, towards the Caspian Sea. It was probably from this fort that the name Rha, which is the Tartarian appellation of the river Volga, was first applied by the Arabian physicians to the several species of rheum. The roots, however, which grow in these warm plains are too astringent; and therefore ought not to be used in cases where opening medicines are required. The Calmucs call it *Badshona*, or a stomachic. The young shoots of this plant, which appear in March or April, are deemed a good anti-scorbutic; and are used as such by the Russians. The *R. Rha-ponticum* is not found to the west of the Volga; the seeds of this species produced at Petersburg plants of a much greater size than the wild ones; the leaves were large, and of a roundish cordated figure.

The *R. Rhabarbarum* grows in the crevices of bare rocky mountains, and on gravelly soils; it is more particularly found in the high vallies of the romantic county situated beyond Lake Baikal. The buds do not shoot before the end of April, and it continues in flower during the whole month of May. The stalks are eaten raw by the Tartars; they produce upon most persons unaccustomed to them, a spasmodic contraction of the throat, which goes off in a few hours; it returns, however, at every meal, until they become habituated to this kind of diet. The Russians use the leaves in their hodge-podge, and consequently, strangers taking soups of this sort are subject to similar spasmodic contractions. In Siberia the stalk is sometimes preserved as a sweetmeat; and the Germans introduce at their tables, the buds of this plant, as well as of the *Rheum Palmatum*, instead of cauli-flower.

The *R. Rha-ponticum* which commonly grows near the torrents has, as well

* The Yaik, now called the Ural, falls into the Caspian Sea, about four degrees to the east of the Volga.

as the *R. Rhabarbarum* of Siberia, the upper part of the roots generally rotten, from too much moisture; and consequently only a small portion of the lower extremity is fit for use. The Russian College of Physicians order, for the use of the military hospital, large quantities of these roots to be dug up in Siberia, which are prescribed under the name of rhapontic. But the persons employed in digging and preparing them are so ill instructed, that the best juices are frequently lost. These roots ought to be drawn up in the spring, soon after the melting of the snow, when the plant retains all its sap and strength; whereas they are not taken out of the ground before August, when they are wasted by the increase of the stem, and the expansion of the leaves. Besides, the roots are no sooner taken up, than they are immediately sliced in small pieces, and thus dried; by which means the medicinal qualities are sensibly impaired.

But the same roots, which from being improperly prepared were of little efficacy, when dried with due precaution, were found to yield an excellent rhubarb. The process observed by Mr. Pallas, was as follows: the roots were suspended over a stove, where being gradually dried, they were cleansed from the earth; by these means, although they were actually taken up in autumn, they so nearly resembled the best Tartarian rhubarb in colour, texture, and qualities, that they answered the same medicinal purposes.

A German apothecary, named Zukert, made similar trials with the same success, both on the *Rheum Rhabarbarum* and *R. Rhaponticum*, which grow in great perfection on the mountains in the neighbourhood of Nerzhinsk. He formed plantations of these herbs on the declivity of a rock*, covered

* To succeed in the plantation of rhubarb, and to procure sound roots, a dry, light soil with a rocky foundation, where the moisture easily filters off, is essentially necessary.

with

with one foot of good mould, mixed with an equal quantity of sand and gravel. When summer proved dry, the plants were left in the ground; but if the season was rainy, they were drawn out of the ground, left some days in the shade to dry, and then replanted. By this method of cultivation he produced in seven or eight years very large and sound roots, which the rock had prevented from penetrating too deep; and when properly dried, one scruple was as efficacious as a drachm of Tartarian rhubarb.

From the foregoing observations it follows, that there are other plants, besides the *Rheum Palmatum*, the roots whereof have been found to be similar, both in their appearance and effects, to what is called the best rhubarb. And, indeed, upon enquiries made at Kiakta concerning the form and leaves of the plant which produces that drug, it seems not to be the *R. Palmatum*, but a species with roundish scolloped leaves, and most probably the *R. Rhaponticum*: for Pallas, when at Kiakta, applied for information to a Bucharian merchant of Selin Chotton, who now supplies the crown with rhubarb; and his description of that plant answered to the figure of the *Rheum Rhaponticum*. The truth of this description was still further confirmed by some Mongol travellers who had been in the neighbourhood of Koko-Nor and Thibet, and had observed the rhubarb growing wild on those mountains.

The experiments also made by Zukert and others, on the roots of the *R. Rhabarbarum* and *R. Rhaponticum*, sufficiently prove, that this valuable drug was procured from those roots in great perfection. But, as the seeds of the *Rheum Palmatum* were received from the father of the above-mentioned Bucharian merchant, as taken from the plant which furnishes the true rhubarb, we have reason to conjecture, that these three species, viz.

R. Pal-

R. Palmatum, *R. Rhaponticum*, and *R. Rhabarbarum*, when found in a drier and milder alpine climate, and in proper situations, are indiscriminately drawn up, whenever the size of the plant seems to promise a fine root. Perhaps the remarkable difference of the rhubarb, imported to Kiakta, is occasioned by this indiscriminate method of collecting them. It is certain that these plants grow wild on the mountains, without the least cultivation; and those are esteemed the best which are found near the Koko-Nor, and about the sources of the river Koango.

Formerly the exportation of rhubarb from Russia was confined to the crown. This monopoly, however, was abolished by Catherine the second, and a free exportation from St. Peterburgh granted to all persons on paying the duty. It is sold, in the first instance, by the College of Commerce, for the profit of the Sovereign; and is preserved in their magazines at St. Peterburgh. The current price is settled every year by the College of Commerce.

It is received from the Bucharian merchants at Kiakta in exchange for furs; and the prime cost is rated at 16 roubles per pood. By adding the pay of the commissioners who purchase it, and of the examining apothecary, and allowing for other necessary expences, the value of a pood at Kiakta amounts to 25 roubles: add to this the carriage from the frontiers to St. Peterburgh, and it is calculated that the price of a pood stands the crown at 30 roubles. The largest was made in the year 1765, when 1350 pood were exported, at 65 roubles per pood.

EXPORTATION of RHUBARB
from St. PETERSBURGH.

In 1777, 29 poods 13 pounds } at 76½ Dutch * dollars, or 91 roubles, 30 co-
peca, per pood.

In 1778, 23 poods 7 pounds, at 80 ditto, or 96 roubles.

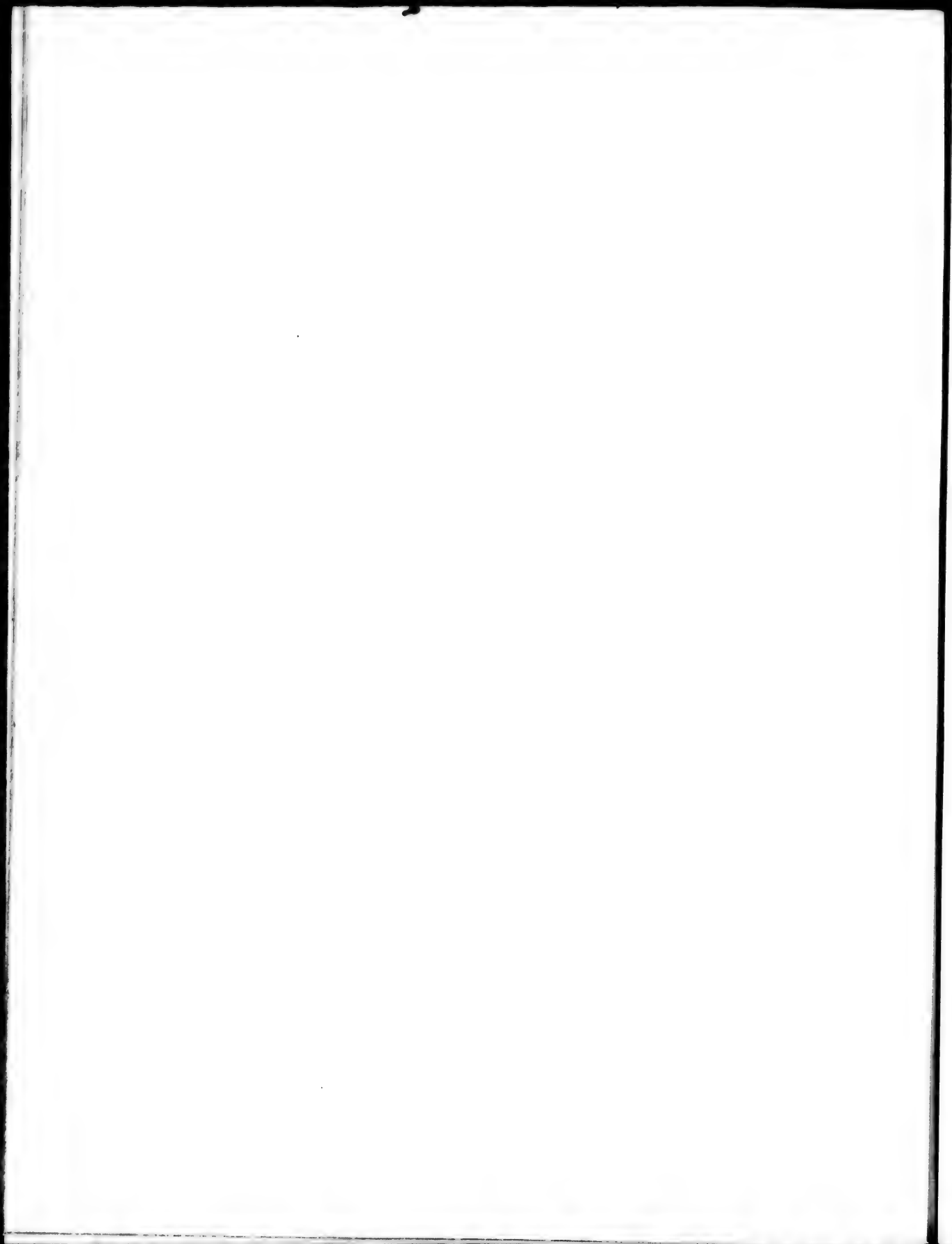
In 1779, 1055 poods were brought by the Bucharian merchants to Kiakta; of which 680 poods 19 pounds were selected. The interior consumption of the whole empire of Russia for 1777 amounted to only 6 poods 5 pounds †.

The superiority of this Tartarian rhubarb over that procured from Canton arises probably from the following circumstances. 1. The southern parts of China are not so proper for the growth of this plant, as the mountains of Little Bucharina. 2. There is not so scrupulous an examination in receiving it from the Chinese at Canton, as from the Bucharians at Kiakta. For the merchants, who purchase this drug at Canton, are obliged to take it in the gross without separating the bad roots, and cutting away the decayed parts, as is done at Kiakta. 3. Probably also the long transport of this drug by sea is detrimental from the humidity which it contracts during a long voyage.

* If we reckon a Dutch dollar, on an average, to be worth 1 rouble 20 copeca.

† This calculation comprehends only the rhubarb purchased at the different magazines belonging to the College of Commerce; for what was procured by contraband trade is of course not included.

F I N I S.



INDEX TO THE RUSSIAN DISCOVERIES.

A.

- АРОУНАК**, Island of, page 223.
 Agatuku, one of the Aleutian Islands, 98.
 Akutan Island, 172.
 Alaksu Island, 113, 115.
 Alaxa, Coast of surveyed by Krenitsin, 193.
 Alexeeff's Expedition into the Frozen Ocean, 293.
 Aleutian Islands discovered by Nevodtsikof, 86—Visited by Tolstyk, 93—Manners of the Inhabitants, *ibid*—Further Description, 93, 98, 106, 183, 270, 276.
 America, N. W. Coast of, discovered, 20—Appearance as described by Steller, 28, 34—Conjectures relative to the Part discovered by Beering and Tchirikof, 72—Voyage of Ismaelof and Betsharof, 232—Account of the Inhabitants, 247—Desiderata in the Geography of that Coast, 312.
 Andreanofsky Isles, 119—Manners of the Inhabitants, 121.
 Andrian and Natalia, Voyage of, 103, 117, 142.
 Ankudinof's Voyage in the Frozen Ocean, 288.
 Atchaka or Middleton's Island, visited by Ismaelof, 240.
 Atchu Island, 120.
 Atlasof penetrates into Kamtschatka, and takes possession of that Peninsula, 1.
 Ayagh Island, 119.

B.

- Bassof's Visits to Beering's and Copper Islands, 86.
 Bear Islands, Account of, 295, *Note*.
 Beaver Skins, Number sent from England to St. Petersburg, 337.
 Beering, Vitus, entrusted with the command of an Expedition to discover the Separation or Vicinity of Asia and America, 18—His Instructions, *ibid*—Account of his Voyage, *ibid*—Second Voyage, 20—His last Voyage, *ibid*—Account of by Steller, 26—Touches at Kaye's Island, 29—Return, 49—Driven on

Beering's Island, 51—His Death and Character, 39.

Beering's Island, 51.

Betshevin, Voyage of, 112.

Billings, Captain, his Voyage towards the Coast of America, 268—Lands on the Coast of the Tchutski, and passes through their Country, 274—Return of his Ships, 278—His Voyage to the Frozen Ocean, 300.

Bolcheretsk, a Division of Kamtschatka, 2.
 Bragin, his Adventures, 126.

C.

- Catherine the First executes the Plan formed by Peter the Great for discovering the Separation or Vicinity of Asia and America, 18.
 Catherine the second abolishes the Monopoly possessed by the Crown of Russia, in the Chinese Trade, 338.
 Chinese, their Contests with the Russians in Siberia, 330—Besiege Albasin, 331—Treaty of Nerchinsk with the Russians, 332—Allow the Russians to form a Trading Establishment at Pekin, 334—Subsequent Disputes, 336—Treaty of Kiakta, 337—Description of the Chinese Frontier Town Maimatschin, 343—Their Worship and Conduct during an Eclipse, 352—Mode of Trade, 354—Singularity of their Pronunciation, 355—Principal Commodities exported and imported, 356.
 Cook, Captain, his Conjecture relative to the Part of America touched at by Beering, 73—Extent of his Discoveries, 205.
 Copper Island, 80, 143, 192.

D.

- Delisle, the Geographer, Death of, 21.
 Deshuet's Voyage in the Northern Ocean, 288—His Contest with Soliverstof relative to their Discoveries, *ibid. Note*.
 Desiderata in the Geography of the American and Asiatic Coasts, 312.

Dis-

Discoveries of the Russians, Rise and Progress of, 8—Description of the Russian Vessels, and the Manner in which their Voyages are made, *ibid.* See VOYAGES.
 Drusinin, Voyage of, 99—In the Zacharias and Elizabeth, 123—Distresses of his Crew, 125.

Durnef's Voyage, 98.

E. Elias St., Cape of Beering, 29—Singular Mountain, 76.

Engel, his Errors in regard to the Practicability of a N. E. Passage, 286, *Note*, 294, *Note*.

Etches, Port. See NUTCHER.

F. Fox Skins, different Species of, 12.—Value, 13.

Foxes black, 12—Arctic and Stone Foxes, 13.

Fox Islands discovered, 112—Accounts of the Inhabitants, *ibid.* 172. 183.

Fur Trade, Origin of, 2—Duties paid on the Exportation from Kamtchatka, 3—Vessels and Manner of making the Expeditions to the Islands, 8. 200. 277—Profits of the Trade, 10—Species of Furs, *ibid.*—Route by which they are conveyed to the Chinese Frontiers, *ibid.*—Present and former Value of Sea-Otter Skins, 12.

G. Glottof's Voyage in the Andrean and Natalia, 142—Attempts of the Natives to destroy his Crew, 145.

Golovin concludes a Peace with the Chinese, 332.

I. Ismaelof's Voyage on the Coast of America, 232—Reaches Prince William's Sound, 233—Proceeds to Atchaka or Middleton's Island, 240—To Koyac or Kaye's Island, 242—Coasts the American Shore, *ibid.*—Return, 262.

Ivan Vasilievitch II. sends a Body of Troops into Siberia, 318.

K. Kadyak, Account of, 148—Description of Shelekof's Establishment on that Island, 169.

Kamtchatka Peninsula, when discovered, 1—Reduced under the Russian Dominion, 2—Description of, *ibid.*—Divisions, Government, and Population, *ibid.*—Military Force stationed there, *ibid.*—Volcanoes, 3. 5.—Face of the Country and Vegetable Productions, 3—Recent Accounts of Kamtchatka, 4.

Kamtchadales, Manner in which they procure Fire, 196, *Note*.

Kanaga Island, 120.

Kaye's Island, the Part visited in Beering's Expedition, 30. 75—Description of by Steller, *ibid.*—Visited by Ismaelof, 242.

Kiakta, Treaty of, between the Russians and Chinese, 336—Renewed, 339—Kiakta, one of the Stations appointed for the Trade between the Russians and Chinese, 337—Description of, 340—Demarcation of the Boundaries, 342—Mode of conducting the Trade, 354—Principal Commodities, 356—Duties, 361—Exportations and Importations in 1777. 362—Rhubarb Trade, 368.

Kinaighi, Account of, 230.

Koliuski, a Tribe on the American Coast, 249.

Kolodilof's Voyage, 100.

Konaghi, the Natives of Kadyak described, 227.

Korovin's Voyage, 130—Attacked by the Natives, 135—His Distresses and Adventures, *ibid.*

Krasilnikof's Voyage, 103.

Krenitzin's Voyage, 191.

Kutchum Khan, one of the principal Chiefs of Siberia, 320—Defeated by Yermac, 322—Conquers Yermac and recovers his Possessions, 326.

L. Laptief's Voyage, 285.

Levashef's Voyage, 191.

Ltouna Bay visited by Ismaelof, 258—Account of the Country and Inhabitants, 261.

Lyssie Ostrova. See FOX ISLANDS.

M. Mackenzie, his Expeditions through the

Continent of America, 310, *Note*.

Maimatchin, the Chinese Town appointed for

- for transacting the Commerce with Russia, 342—Described, 343.
- Manshurs, a Tartar Tribe who made themselves Masters of China, Account of, 330, *Note*.
- Middleton's Island visited by Ismaelof, 240.
- Montague Island or Suklia, visited by Ismaelof, 233.
- Morosko Lucas Semænof makes the first Expedition to Kamtschatka, 1.
- Moroviof's Voyage to discover a North East Passage, 282.
- Muller, his Mistake respecting the Geography of the North-Eastern Part of Asia, 20, 82, *Note*—His Account of Beering's last Voyage, 20.
- N.
- Nershinsk, Treaty of, between the Russians and Chinese, 332.
- Nevodshikof, his Voyage to the Aleutian Isles, 86.
- North-East Passage, Remarks on the Practicability of, 282—Attempts of some Dutch Vessels to discover it, 285, *Note*. See VOYAGES.
- Novikof's and Baccof's Voyage, 96.
- Nutchek Bay or Port Etches, 235, *Note*—Account of the Russian Settlement there, 264.
- O.
- Ofzin's Voyage to discover a North-East Passage, 283.
- Otcheredín's Voyage, 177.
- Otters, Sea, where taken, 10—Fineness of the Fur, *ibid*—Number of Skins sent from England to St. Petersburg, 357, *Note*.
- P.
- Paikof's Voyage, 110.
- Peter the Great forms the Plan of a Voyage of Discovery to ascertain the Separation or Vicinity of Asia and America, 17.
- Peter and Paul, Voyage of the, 116.
- Portlock's Harbour. See LTOVA BAY.
- Protassof's Crew massacred by the Natives of Umnak, 137, 161.
- Prontshistshel's Voyage, 283.
- R.
- Rheum. See RHUBARB.
- Rhubarb purchased by the Russians at Kiakta, 368—Description of the different Species, 369—Care taken in the Selection, *ibid*—Price, 374—Exportation from St. Petersburg, 375.
- Russians, Rise and Progress of their Discoveries, 8—Their Attempts to discover a N. E. Passage, 282—Conquer Siberia, 318—Contests with the Chinese, 330—Treaty of Nershinsk, 332—Obtain a Trading Establishment at Pekin, 334—Expelled from China, 336—Treaty of Kiakta, *ibid*—Catherine II. abolishes the Monopoly possessed by the Crown, in favour of her Subjects, 338—Mode of conducting the Trade, 354—Principal Commodities, 356—Duties, 361—Exportations and Importations in 1777, 362.
- S.
- Sauer, Mr. his Proof that Beering touched at Kaye's Island, 32, *Note*—His Account of Billings's Expedition, 269—Description of Shelekov's Establishment on Kadyak, *ibid*—Account of the Natives of the Aleutian Isles, 276.
- Schumagin Isles, 39—Appearance of the Natives, 45.
- Sea-horse Teeth, Value of, 13.
- Serchranikof's Voyage, 101.
- Shan'yirin, his Adventures, 126.
- Shalnurof's Voyage to double Tchukotskoi Noss, 295—His supposed Fate, 298.
- Shelekov's Voyage to Kadyak, 207—His Contest with the Natives, 210—Winters on the Island, 214—Conciliates the Natives, *ibid*—His different Expeditions and Settlements, 221—Returns, 223—His Account of the Islands on the American Coast, 226—Of his Settlement on Kadyak, 269.
- Shilkin's Voyage, 97, 107.
- Siberia, History of the Conquest of, by Yermac, 317—Defeat and Death of Yermac, 329—The Country recovered by the Russians, *ibid*—Their Contests with the Chinese, 330—Arrangement of the respective Boundaries, 332.
- Soliverstov's Expedition, 292—His Controversy with Deshnef relative to their Discoveries, 288 *Note*, 292 *Note*.

Solo-

- Soloviof's Voyage, 160.
 Spanberg sails with Beering in his Voyage to America, 18.
 Steller's Narrative of Beering's last Voyage, 24—His Description of his landing on Kaye's Island, 29—His Account of one of the Schumagin Isles, 39—Appearance of the Natives, 45—Account of his Landing on Beering's Island, 52—Distress of the Russians, 56—Their Mode of living on the Island, 57—Remarks on his Narrative, 72.
 Strogonof first trades with the Natives of Siberia, 318.
 Studentsof's Voyage, 107.
 Synd's Voyage to the N. E. of Siberia, 203.
 T.
 Tchitschagof's Voyages from Archangel to discover a N. E. Passage, 302—His Account of the Navigation, 306.
 Tchukotskoi Noss described, 290, 292.
 Tchutski, People of the N. E. Coast of Asia, their Conduct to Captain Billings, 274.
 Toigon, a Title given to the Chiefs in the new-discovered Islands, and on the Coast of America, *passim*.
 Tolsty's Voyage, 95.
 Trapesnikof's Voyages, 94, 98.
 Tschirikof sails with Beering towards the Coast of America, 18, 20.
 Tsetchina, one of the Andreanofsky Isles, 120.
 Tshugutsk, Bay of, Places distinguished by this Appellation in the Russian Charts, 213, *Note*—That visited by Ismaelof, Prince William's Sound, 233—Described, 239.
 U.
 Ugalak Mutes, a Tribe living on the Coast of America, 245.
 Umnak Island, Account of, 140, 153, 172, 184, 194.
 Unalushka, Account of, 140, 172, 184, 194.
 V.
 Vancouver, Captain, his Conjectures relative to the Part of America discovered by Beering, 73—His Account of the Russian Settlement of Port Etches, 264—Remarks on his Discoveries, 310.

Vorobief's Voyage, 96.

- Voyages, of Beering towards the N. W. Coast of America, 18—Of Bassof, 86—Ne-vodtsikof, *ibid*—Other Voyages, 92—Yugof, 93—Trapesnikof, 94, 98—Tolsty, 95—Vorobief, 96—Novikof and Baccof, *ibid*—Shilkin, 97—Drusin, 99—Kolodilof, 100—Serebranikof, 101—Krasilnikof, 103—Studentsof, 107—Paikof, 110—Of the St. Peter and St. Paul, 116—Andrean and Natalia, 117—Drusin, 123—Korovin, 130—Glottof, 142—Soloviof, 160—Otcheredin, 177—Krenitzin and Levashof, 191—Synd, 203—Shelekof, 207—Ismaelof and Betsharof 222—Billings to the Coast of America, 268, 274—Voyages to discover a N. E. Passage—Of Moroviof, 282—Malgin and Shurakof, *ibid*—Ofzin Koskelef, Prontshistshef, and Menin, *ibid*—Laptief, 285—Deshnef and Ankudinof, 288—Alexeef, 293—Shalaurof, 295—Billings, 300—Tchitschagof, 302.

W.

- Waxel, Lieutenant, returns with the Remainder of Beering's Crew, after their Shipwreck, 68.
 William's, Prince, Sound, visited by Ismaelof, 233.
 Wsevidof's Voyage, 93.

Y.

- Yakutat, Bay of, visited by Ismaelof, 247.
 Yermac, a Cossac, Account of his early Adventures, 319—His first Expedition into Siberia, 321—Defeats Kutchum Khan, 323—Assisted by the Russians, 325—Cut off by Kutchum Khan, 329—His Death, and the Veneration of the Natives for his Memory, *ibid*.
 Yugof's Voyage, 93.

Z.

- Zukert, an Apothecary, his Experiments on the different Species of Rhubarb, 372.
 Zurukaitu, one of the Stations appointed for the Trade between the Russians and Chinese, 327—Description, 364—Trade, *ibid*—Transport of the Russian Commodities thither, 365.

LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL BOOKS

Referred to in this Work.

Muller's *Samlung Russischer Geschichte*, IX vols. 8vo., printed at St. Petersburg in 1732, and the following years; it is referred to in the following manner: S R. G. with the volume and page annexed.

From this excellent collection I have made use of the following treatises:

Vol. II. p. 293, &c. *Geschichte der Gegenden an dem Flusse Amur*.

There is a French translation of this treatise called *Histoire du Fleuve Amur*, 12mo. Amsterdam, 1776.

Vol. III. p. 1, &c. *Nachrichten von See Reisen*, &c.

There is an English and French translation of this work; the former is called "*Voyages from Asia to America for completing the Discoveries of the North West Coast of America*," 4to. London, 1764. The title of the latter is, "*Voyages et Decouvertes faites par les Russes*," &c. 12mo. Amsterdam, 1766, p. 413. *Nachrichten Von der Handlung in Sibirien*.

Vol. VI. p. 109, *Sibirische Geshichte*.

Vol. VIII. p. 504, *Nachricht Von der Russischen Handlung nach China*.

Pallas Reise durch verschiedne Provinzen des Russischen Reichs, in Three Parts, 4to. St. Petersburg, 1771, 1773, and 1776; thus cited, *Pallas Reise*.

Georgi Bemerkungen einer Reise im Russischen Reich in Jahre, 1772, 3 vols. 4to. St. Petersburg, 1773; cited *Georgi Reise*.

Fischer Sibirische Geschichte, 2 volumes, 8vo. St. Petersburg; cited *Fis. Sib. Ges.*

Gmelin Reise durch Sibirien, tome IV. 8vo., Gottingen, 1752, cited *Gmelin Reise*.

There is a French translation of this work, called "*Voyage en Siberie*," &c. par Gmelin. Paris, 1767.

LIST OF BOOKS.

Neueste Nachrichten von Kamtschatka aufgesetzt im Junius des 1773^{ten} Jahren von dem dafigen Befehls-haber Herrn Kapitain Smalew.

Aus dem abhandlungen der freyen Russischen Gesellschaft Moskau.

In the Journal of St. Petersburg, April, 1776—cited Journal of St. Petersburg.

Pallas's Neue Nordische Beytraege zur Physikalishen and Geographischen Erd- und Volker Beschribung, Naturgeschichte und Ockonomie, 8vo. St. Petersburg und Leipzig, 1781—1796, 7 vols.

Cook's Voyage to the North Pacific Ocean, in 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780, 3 vols. 4to. London, 1785.

A Voyage Round the World, more particularly to the North-West Coast of America, by Captains Portlock and Dixon, 4to. London, 1789.

A Voyage Round the World, but more particularly to the North-West Coast of America, in 1785, 6, 7, and 8, by Captain Nathaniel Portlock, 4to. London, 1789.

A Voyage made in 1788 and 1789 from China to the North-West Coast of America, by John Meares, 4to. London, 1790.

A Voyage of Discovery to the North Pacific Ocean, and Round the World; in which the Coast of North-West America has been carefully examined and surveyed; performed in 1790, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, by Captain George Vancouver, 3 vols. 4to. London, 1798.

Voyages from Montreal, through the Continent of America, to the Frozen and Pacific Oceans, in 1789 and 1793, by Alexander Mackenzie, Esq. 4to. London, 1801.

An Account of the Geographical and Astronomical Expedition to the Northern Parts of Russia, &c. by Commodore Joseph Billings; narrated from the original papers by Martin Sauer, Secretary to the Expedition, 4to. London, 1802.

Printed by James Easton,
High-street, Sarum.

WORKS

WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

The Author has printed Sixty Copies of this Work on Royal Quarto, with a view to correspond with the large paper copies of his other Works.

Memoirs of the Life and Administration of Sir Robert Walpole, with original Correspondence and authentic Papers, never before published, 3 vols. 4to. Price 3*l.* 1*5s.*

The same Work in 3 vol. 8vo. without the Correspondence, Price 1*l.* 4*s.*

Memoirs of Horatio Lord Walpole, selected from his Correspondence and Papers, and connected with the History of the Times, until his Death in 1757. Illustrated with Portraits, 4to. 3*l.* 3*s.*

An Historical Tour in Monmouthshire, embellished with Views by Sir R. C. Hoare, Bart. engraven by Byrne, and other eminent Artists; Portraits, Plans of Roman Stations, Towns, Castles, and antient Encampments; and illustrated with a new Whole Sheet Map of the County. This work contains not less than ninety plates, exclusive of the map, 4*l.* 4*s.*

Travels in Poland, Russia, Sweden, and Denmark, with considerable Additions, 5 vol. 8vo. 5th edition.

In Compliance with the Request of several Friends, the Author has also published a new Edition of his Travels in Poland, Russia, Sweden, and Denmark, 3 vol. 4to. large Paper. It consists of only fifty Copies, and is intended to correspond with the large paper Copies of his other Works.

A whole length Portrait of the Emperor Paul I. is added in his usual Costume; it was engraven from an original Picture in the Possession of Lord Whitworth, late British Minister at the Court of Petersburg, and the Plate destroyed when the requisite Number of Impressions had been taken off.

Printed for T. CADELL and W. DAVIES, in the Strand, and J. WHITE, Fleet-street.

Travels in Switzerland, and the Country of the Grisons, 3 vol. 8vo. fourth edition, with an Historical Sketch and Notes on the late Revolution.

A few Copies are printed on Royal Paper, with Smith's Views, 2*l.* 2*s.*

Biographical Anecdotes of Handel and Smith, 4to. with Portraits, and Select Pieces of Music, composed by J. C. Smith, never before published. Price, on fine paper 1*l.* 4*s.*, and on common paper 1*2s.* Published for the benefit of Mr. Smith's relations.

Gay's Fables, with Notes, 2*s.* 6*d.*

A Sermon on the Excellence of British Jurisprudence, preached before the Honourable Sir Francis Buller, Bart. and the Honourable Sir Nash Giose, Knt. March 10, 1799, in the Cathedral Church of Salisbury, and published at their Request, 1*s.*

Explanation of the Catechism of the Church of England, 6*d.*

An Abridgement of Secker's Tract on Confirmation, 3*d.*